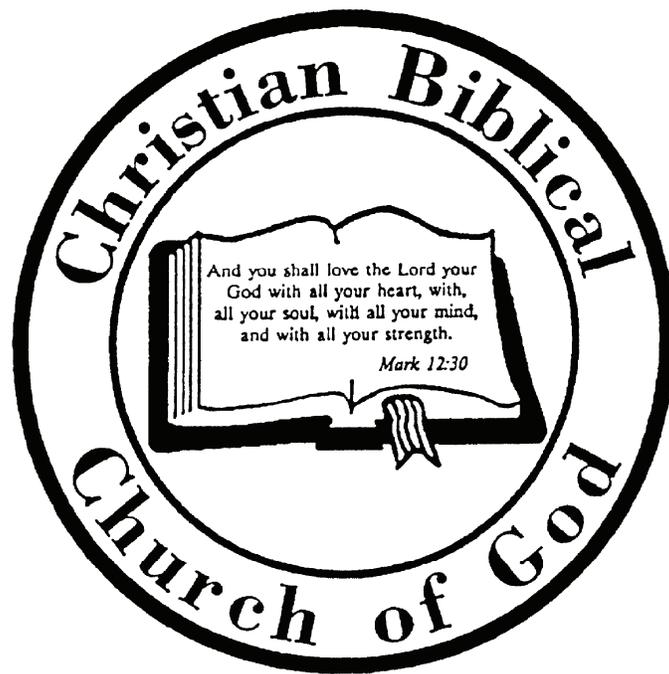


# Pastoral Epistles



**Transcript Book**

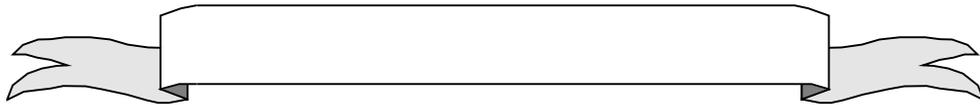
By Fred R. Coulter

© 2015  
Fred R. Coulter  
Christian Biblical Church of God  
P. O. Box 1442  
Hollister, California 95024-1442

*All rights reserved. Except for brief excerpts for review purposes, no part of this publication may be reproduced or used in any form or by any means without the written permission of the copyright owner. This includes electronic and mechanical photocopying or recording, as well as the use of information storage and retrieval systems.*

# DOCUMENT *of* COMPLETION

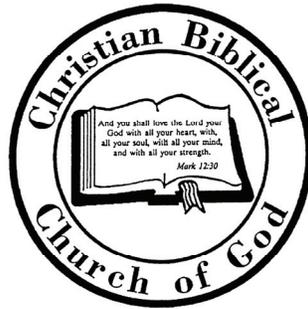
THIS ACKNOWLEDGES THAT, I



HAVE SUCCESSFULLY COMPLETED

## Pastoral Epistles

Series of 9 sermons by Fred R. Coulter



\_\_\_\_\_  
Signature

\_\_\_\_\_  
Date

- |   |                      |
|---|----------------------|
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles I    | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles II   | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles III  | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles IV   | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles V    | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles VI   | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles VII  | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles VIII | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Pastoral Epistles IX   | Date completed _____ |

# Contents

## Booklet

	PAGE
Pastoral Epistles I -----	1 – 12
Pastoral Epistles II -----	13 – 23
Pastoral Epistles III -----	24 – 34
Pastoral Epistles IV -----	35 – 46
Pastoral Epistles V -----	47 – 58
Pastoral Epistles VI -----	59 – 70
Pastoral Epistles VII -----	71 – 82
Pastoral Epistles VIII -----	83 – 93
Pastoral Epistles IX -----	94 – 104

## Compact Disc

*[When included]*

- Tracks 1 & 2 Pastoral Epistles I
- Tracks 3 & 4 Pastoral Epistles II
- Tracks 5 & 6 Pastoral Epistles III
- Tracks 7 & 8 Pastoral Epistles IV
- Tracks 9 & 10 Pastoral Epistles V
- Tracks 11 & 12 Pastoral Epistles VI
- Tracks 13 & 14 Pastoral Epistles VII
- Tracks 15 & 16 Pastoral Epistles VIII
- Tracks 17 & 18 Pastoral Epistles IX

# Foreword

Today it is evident that too many churches in the world, as well as a number of churches of God, have all but ignored the Pastoral Epistles. However, they are vitally essential. First, for an elder, or overseer on how he is to conduct his life, and how he is to teach the brethren. As a matter of fact, this actually becomes a profound charge from Jesus Christ through the Apostle Paul, written down and preserved for all elders and teachers down through time.

We are also charged on how to rightly divide the Word of God and to only preach the Word of God—in season and out of season. We are not to teach the traditions of men. It also makes it very clear that women have no authority over men in the church.

God caused Paul to write these for us who are elders or teachers, so that we can serve the brethren spiritually, feeding them with the Word of God and His truth only. There are also distinct warnings against false doctrines, and false teachings that are never to be allowed in the congregations or fellowships of the true Church of God. It also shows concerning false teachings and false teachers, that Christ requires us to use all the power necessary to keep them out of the churches of God.

So as you read and study these Pastoral Epistles please keep these things in mind. And for anyone who is in a position of teaching, read and study these epistles as if they were personally written to you.

Special thanks goes to Bonnie Orswell for transcribing these messages.

# Pastoral Epistles I

## 1-Timothy 1 thru 1-Timothy 2:8

Fred R. Coulter

Every time I translate I learn so much. In the *Seven General Epistles* book I mention why I translate: so that it can help me in my understanding for teaching the brethren, so that I can know the Word of God. If I don't know the Word of God, how can I teach you the Word of God? I think that we will see that that is a very important thing that the Apostle Paul mentions to Timothy.

We're also in a situation that these four books—1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy, Titus and Philemon—are what are called Pastoral Epistles, meaning *instructions on how to run a church*. I think it's very important for us to understand, as God is sending more brethren to us, to fellowship with us, then we will be coming to the point where we will have more and more fellowship groups. They generally start out small, 2-5, and build to 7-12. In some cases they're up to 20-25. We need to know:

- how God wants us to have a church run
- what are the instructions that are given
- how can we do so to avoid the pitfalls of a hierarchical structure
- how we can have order and organization without having to have an iron fisted ministry there ready to just put their fist down your throat for every little thing that isn't correct
- how we can properly serve and love God

I think the answers are right here in these epistles that Paul wrote to Timothy and Titus, and then Philemon is a very interesting epistle, which is very, very short, but what it really does is reveal Paul's humility. That's something that's so important and needs to be wherever there are ministers, teachers and elders: ***the true humility that comes with God's Spirit!***

You can put on a false humility and you can feign some of these things, but with the Spirit of God it just needs to be there in reality.

As one woman told me, *'I know why there were so many problems in the churches in the past.'* I think we can apply this to churches in the world, too. Are not all churches in the world hierarchical? *Yes!* She said, *'The ministers did not love the brethren!'*

***Paul loved the brethren!*** That's why he wrote so many epistles. Would it be entirely correct for us to pattern what we do after what we find in the Epistles of Paul? *Yes!*

We're going to see that there is authority. There is very strong authority, but it's to be exercised in a proper way, for the proper thing. When everyone is loving each other and cooperating with each other, how much authority do you need? *Very little!* But when you have problems and difficulties you need lots of authority to handle and take care of the problem. That's the authority that God has given.

Instead of making a detailed study of this, I'm going to do more of an overview and point out things as we go along. We'll save more of the detailed studies for another time.

1-Timothy 1:1: "Paul an apostle of Jesus Christ according to *the* commandment of God our Savior... [God] ...and of *the* Lord Jesus Christ, *Who is* our hope." That's the most important thing that we need to realize, always. We'll see, as we go through here, there is ***faith, hope, and love***; those are the three greatest! God gives us great *hope*, tremendous *hope!*

Let's look at the example of Abraham. I think there's an awful lot you will find in *The Christian Passover* book that we never really understood about Abraham and the Passover—the timing of it and so forth. I think you will understand that the night of 14<sup>th</sup> Passover we keep was the words of the Covenant of Life. That's very important!

Here's the example of Abraham. He had every odd against him. If you were a betting man in Las Vegas you wouldn't make any bets on a 100-year-old man and a 90-year-old woman. Why did God wait for them to be so old? *He deliberately did it!* Why? ***So they would know that Isaac came from God!*** That's why! So that they would know that ***it was completely God's doing!*** Not anything that *they* had done. They well knew their own bodies.

Romans 4:17: "(Exactly as it is written: 'I have made you a father of many nations.') before God in Whom he believed, Who gives life to the dead, and calls the things that are not as though they are." God can say that simply because God *is* God! Whatever God says *is true!* If He says it today, but doesn't do until 2,000 years down the road, it's as good as done today!

This is where Abraham received his *hope* and *faith* so he could *believe* God when God took him out on the night of the 14<sup>th</sup> and said, 'Look at the stars and if you're able to count them, so shall

your seed be.’ That was the promise of *spiritual* seed. *And the spiritual seeds are us! ‘If you are Christ’s then you are Abraham’s seed and heirs according to the promise’ of glorified eternal life!*

That’s why I said that the night of the 14<sup>th</sup> are the words of the covenant with Christ, or the words of life. The words that God gave to Abraham about that covenant to come was on the night of the 14<sup>th</sup>. Maybe this will help us understand why the 15<sup>th</sup> cannot be the covenant day. It’s the 14<sup>th</sup> that is the covenant day.

What happened on the 15<sup>th</sup>? *Christ died on the 14<sup>th</sup> and was in the grave!* So, if you try and renew the covenant on the 15<sup>th</sup>, not only are you a day off, but you are on the day of death. *Only God can deliver you from that death!*

There are just so many things that are in the Bible for us to learn it’s something! It is really fantastic! *‘God counts the things that are not as though they are.’* That’s why we can have *faith and hope* in God.

Verse 18: *“And who against hope **believed in hope...**”* Sometimes that’s the only thing you can have. Sometimes your back is so far up against the wall and you’re so down and out, hurt, sore, sick, penniless, broke, homeless—whatever—and there’s nothing to do but *hope in hope*.

Sometimes when we get in those positions, that is the best position to be in. Why? *Because you trust in God! You hope in God!* You’re tired of your own way, you’re all worn out and exhausted from doing what you can do, and now ***your only hope is in God!*** That’s good! Wouldn’t you say that’s good? *Yes, indeed!*

“...in order that he might become a father of many nations, according to that which was spoken, ‘So shall your seed be.’ And he, not being weak in the faith, considered not his own body... [that was dead, and all the implications that that means] ...already having become dead, being about one hundred years old, nor *did he consider* the deadness of Sarah’s womb; and he did not doubt the promise of God through unbelief; rather, he was strengthened in the faith, giving glory to God” (vs 18-20)—knowing that God would be able to do it. If God *is* God, can He not do anything?

God said, when He came to the final meeting that God had with Abraham and Sarah, ‘Next year at this time you’re going to have a son.’ Sarah snickered! The Lord said, ‘Why did you laugh?’ *I didn’t laugh, my Lord.* ‘Yes, you did laugh; nevertheless...’ If you’re 90-years-old and the woman, you’re going to laugh! ‘...nevertheless, you are going to have a son.’ Then He said, ‘Is anything impossible for the Lord?’ That’s what’s important.

Let’s couple that with what we’re coming into here, with what we’re studying in 1-Tim.: Is it possible to have the brethren in the fellowship groups and congregations organized in such a way—***based on the love, faith and hope of God***—that we don’t have to have a hierarchy? Yet, we can have overseers, elders and deacons—*all to serve? Yes, it is possible!* The reason why there has to be a hierarchy in these other churches is because *without the love of God* you’ve got to have a hierarchy to control it. You think on that!

I talked to a man who left one of the notorious heavy-handed churches, he said, ‘I never heard a word of love or grace.’ *Not a word!* He said, ‘When I listened to those grace sermons it just laid me low.’ I said, ‘Wait until you get the *love sermons.*’

“...he was strengthened in the faith, giving glory to God; for he was **fully persuaded...**” (vs 20-21). This is where we would all agree that we need to come to; being “...fully persuaded...”—without a doubt. That means you have ***faith, hope and love!***

“...**fully persuaded** that what He has promised, He is also able to do. As a result, it was also imputed to him for righteousness” (vs 21-22). That’s how you’re righteous before God. You *believe* God to such an extent that you’re going to ***love Him and obey Him!*** And you do it *from the heart!* Therefore, that is righteousness imputed to you.

Verse 23: “But it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; rather, *it was also written* for our sakes, to whom it shall be imputed—to those who believe in Him Who raised Jesus our Lord from *the* dead; Who was delivered for our offenses... [crucified] ...and was raised for our justification” (vs 23-25).

Notice how he builds these things. This is important for us to understand so that we can have this kind of hope and we can have this kind of love.

Romans 5:1: “Therefore, having been justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ. Through Whom we also have access **by faith into this grace in which we stand...**” (vs 1-2).

Just picture this: You’re standing before God and you are totally covered with grace, from head to toe. You’re standing with Him as under an umbrella of grace:

- God’s blessing
- God’s goodness
- God’s faith
- God’s love

as well as

- trials
- difficulties
- testing

All of this is all by *grace*. **To have the Holy Spirit from God the Father impregnated in the spirit of your mind is one of the most gracious, wonderful and fantastic things that could ever happen in this life!**

When we understand that in dealing with the Church and the brethren, then we can *love* the brethren and we can *love* each other. You will see how it operates now:

“...and we ourselves boast in *the hope* of the glory of God” (v 2). As Paul says, ‘Jesus Christ Who is our *hope*’; we rejoice in that hope.

Verse 3: “And not only *this*, but we also boast in tribulations...” Why should we glory in tribulation, trouble and upset and difficulty? Is that kind of an insane statement? *No!* We know that we are being tested of God! We know what Christ went through, *the tribulation of the crucifixion*, that we be made conformable to His death.

“...realizing that tribulation brings forth endurance...” (v 3). We can look back and see how many have endured. What did Jesus say in Matt. 24: ‘He that shall endure unto the end—not close to it, not halfway to it, but *to the end!*—the same shall be saved.’

It’s kind of like if you have a chasm that goes down very steeply and you have to jump from the top of the ridge of one to the top of the ridge of the other—you have a very good analogy here—if you only go halfway you didn’t make it; you’re down at the bottom. If you only go three-quarters of the way, you didn’t make it; you’re down there at the bottom. If you go nine-tenths of the way, you almost made it, but you didn’t, and you slid all the way to the bottom.

You’ve got to endure to the very end. Endurance is important; that’s why we go through these things. That’s why we have pain, agony and suffering. We are to suffer to enter into the Kingdom of God, no question about it.

That brings experience, and we can look back and the experience that we have learned... Have you learned things by experience, that now when you see things come up that a little flag goes up in your mind, DING? A little light goes on and you say, ‘Oh, oh!’? Yes, you have learned by experience. Experience is a good teacher, a very good teacher. But if we can learn from the experience of others...

That’s why Paul said later on, ‘We need to learn from what they did in days gone by’—back in the Old Testament. We can learn from that experience.

Verse 4: “And endurance *brings forth* character, and character *brings forth* hope.” Then you know that there’s a way out. You always know that Christ is the *hope*

Verse 5: “And the *hope of God* never makes us ashamed because the love of God has been poured out into our hearts through the Holy Spirit, which has been given to us.” That *hope* is given to us! God is called *the God of Hope*.

This is very important for us to understand, and as we started off with 1-Tim., based on the *hope of God!* We’re going to see why. He’s pointing Timothy in the right direction.

Romans 15:3: “For even Christ did not please Himself...” There’s a very good example. What did Jesus tell Peter? ‘Peter, do you love Me?’ *Yes, Lord!* ‘Feed My sheep!’ He asked Peter again, ‘Do you love Me?’ *Yes, Lord, you know I love You!* ‘Feed My lambs.’ He asked Peter the third time, ‘Peter, do you love Me?’ *Yes!* ‘Feed My sheep.’

So, “...Christ did not please Himself, rather, as it is written, ‘The reproaches of those who are reproaching You have fallen upon Me.’” (v 3). You can kind of think of it like this: Why did Christ have to go through what He went through? He took upon Himself all the violence of the world in this crucifixion—in type—all the reproaches.

Verse 4: “For all the things that were written before were written for our instruction, so that through patient endurance and encouragement of the Scriptures **we might have hope.**”

That’s why when you get down and out, low and miserable, rotten and painful, and you pick up the Bible and read, or you go to some of the Psalms and you start reading it, you can immediately identify with it. The Bible is a different kind of book. It has the same kind of letters as any novel that you would want to pick up. There are only 26 letters in the English alphabet, but these words are inspired by the Spirit of God. These words are *Spirit and Life*, these words are *Spirit and Truth!*

You can read the Scriptures, and you can be uplifted. Have you ever done that? Felt so rotten and miserable and you read the Scriptures, pray and draw close to God, and God lifts that burden from you? *That is the hope of the Scriptures!* or *The Scriptures might have hope!*

Verse 5: “Now, may the God of patience and encouragement **grant you to be likeminded toward one another according to Christ Jesus.**”

That, brethren, we're going to see is a key with any of the fellowship groups or congregations that we have.

Now, let me just tell you this for sure: **We are having to solve all the problems of all of the Churches of God!** Ever think of it that way? We have people come from Worldwide (COG), United (COG), Global/Living (COG), Philadelphia (COG), Church of God Seventh-Day, and from right out of the world. We have former offended relatives now becoming interested in being baptized. We're having to undo every one of those problems.

That's why, in some cases, it becomes a little difficult when we get together, because we're all carrying some kind of baggage with us! We need to get rid of it and become like-minded, which is to have the mind of Christ. This is what Paul is talking about here.

Verse 6: "So that with one accord and one mouth you may glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, receive one another, according as Christ has also received us, to the glory of God" (vs 6-7). That's something! You talk about a reception!

Verse 8: "Now I tell you that Jesus Christ has become a servant to the circumcision for the Truth of God, so that He might confirm the promises given to the fathers." Then Paul talks about all the Gentiles being called (vs 9-12).

This is how we want our fellowship groups to be, v 13: "May the God of hope fill you now with all joy and peace in believing... [God the Father and Jesus Christ] ...that you may **abound in hope and in the power of the Holy Spirit**"—because **He's the God of all hope!**

Let's continue on in 1-Tim. Study *hope* and I think you will be amazed. **Our hope is God!** It's all the way through the Bible.

1-Timothy 1:2: "To Timothy, my true son in the faith: **Grace, mercy and peace** from God our Father and Christ Jesus our Lord." Again, go through and study mercy.

- Has God been merciful to you?
- Have you received the tender mercies of God?

Even through the trials and the sufferings that we go through, *we receive the spiritual tender mercies of God* that we may love Him even more.

Verse 3: "When I was going to Macedonia, I exhorted you to remain in Ephesus, in order that you might *solemnly* charge some... [here's an exercise of authority] ...**not to teach other doctrines.**" What is this authority for? *To stop false doctrines! To stop*

*false teachings!*

Notice some of the other doctrines. You've probably heard many kinds of strange doctrines. You always hear new ones. Some of these things you wonder if they stay up all night trying to figure them out.

Verse 4: "Nor to pay attention to myths..." What were the myths? *The pagan myths! Jewish myths! Disneyland myths! But especially 'religious' myths.*

There was one that came out trying to explain how Christ could have been a created being, but existed forever. That was the infamous sermon called *the Thinker and the Thought*, which basically went like this, which was a myth: God existed forever; God was the *Thinker*. The *Thought* was Logos. He had Logos in His mind throughout all eternity. Logos became the Word. That's how Jesus Christ existed for all eternity, but was a created being. **That is a myth!**

"...and endless genealogies..." (v 4). The Mormons are all wrapped up in that. I remember one time I visited a woman in Salt Lake City and she told me about her experience in the Mormon Church.

What you have to do is get all your family members, and get these endless genealogies. You can, according to one of the myths of Mormon doctrine, be baptized for them, on their behalf, so they can enter into the Kingdom of God, because you're baptized for them.

That's why they do the genealogy work. There was a day when this woman went down to the local Mormon temple to take care of some baptisms for her relatives. It was a snowy day, and she was the only one who showed up. The bishop had 200 names for people to be baptized that day. She was baptized 200 times! She said she felt like she was ready to drown; she was water-logged. Can you imagine being baptized 200 times? *That is an endless genealogy and myth!*

We've heard silliness come into God's Church, too, "...which lead to empty speculations..." (v 4). Oh have we not had empty speculations concerning prophecy? *Endless empty speculations!*

"...rather than to edification from God, which *is* in faith" (v 4). Notice that we have:

- v 1—hope
- v 2—grace, mercy and peace
- v 4—faith

Now, this is the charge Paul is giving

Timothy, v 5: “Now, the purpose of the commandment is **love out of a pure heart**... [that is for everyone, not just Timothy] ...and a good conscience, and **genuine faith**.” There we go again, all the faith.

Let’s understand something that’s important and another principle to learn: ***You cannot accomplish spiritual things through physical means! You accomplish spiritual things through spiritual means!*** We have the principle right here:

Galatians 5:6: “Because in Christ Jesus neither is circumcision of any force... [that’s physical means] ...nor uncircumcision...” Paul is stopping the debate between the Jews and the Gentiles: Who has the greater flesh? Who has the greater ritual? *Neither one! You both have to repent and be baptized into Christ!*

“...rather, ***it is the inner working of faith through love***” (v 6). That ties right in with the kind of love we’re talking about. Everything that Paul talks about here, and the kind of love that needs to be and knowing that these things are right, good and true.

Everything that God does is based on love. Every doctrine that we have is based upon the love and commandments of God; no question about it. So, all of these silly myths and doctrines that come along really just take away *faith, hope and love*.

While at breakfast I notice two men get up and one put on his yamaka and one put on his prayer shawl. What does that tell us? *That we are arrogant about what we believe, and we want the whole world to know by this physical means that we are practicing Jews!* Well, the world could care less. God could care less. It’s what is in your heart, not how many phylacteries are on your prayer cloth. That’s why Jesus emphasized when one of the Jewish lawyers came to Him, tempting Him:

Matthew 22:36: “‘Master, which commandment *is the* great commandment in the Law?’ And Jesus said to him, **‘You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind’**” (vs 36-37). A complete full-time operation!

Verse 38: “This is *the* first and greatest commandment; and *the* second *one is* like it: ‘You shall love your neighbor as yourself.’ On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets” (vs 38-40).

What Jesus covers later on has to do with *law*, understanding God’s way. We know that Jesus also said that ‘not one jot or tittle is going to perish.’ He didn’t come to do away with the Law. If you don’t have that love:

1-Timothy 1:5: “Now, the purpose of the commandment is love out of a pure heart, and a good conscience, and genuine faith; from which some, having missed the mark... [of a pure conscience, genuine faith and love] ...have turned aside unto vain jangling” (vs 5-6). There you have it! That’s how it comes about!

Notice what happens then; they get all important, all big heads, v 7: “Desiring to be teachers of *the* law...” We’ve seen that, too; hundreds of teachers and ministers, papers, sermons, magazines, booklets, doctrinal theses. When you read some of them, you can tell there’s *no love, no hope, no faith, no law*, it’s just an idea!

It’s kind of like someone gets an idea in their brain and DING! ‘that sounds like a good one; I have a new doctrine.’ I asked someone one time, ‘What are you going to do when they clone a pig to chew cud?’ Think on that! Some of these doctrines are about as useless as saying that pigs chew their cud. They are nonsense!

Verse 7: “Desiring to be teachers of *the* law, neither understanding what they are saying, nor what they are strongly affirming.”

Have you ever been talking to someone and you tell them, ‘You really don’t know what you’re talking about; you really don’t understand. Do you understand what you’ve just said?’ *No, but it’s my idea! Since it’s my idea you have to accept my faith.* Unless you have a conscience toward God—no conscience toward the idol of your own mind... That’s what it is here: **“...neither understanding what they are saying, nor what they are strongly affirming.”**

Nothing could be anymore true than with the calendar proposition and all of the nonsense with that. {note Calculated Hebrew Calendar material at [cbcg.org](http://cbcg.org)}

The Calculated Hebrew Calendar is so accurate that it has to be a gift from God so that we know when to keep the Feast days properly. I’ll tell you one little thing: All of those who just go out and look at the new moon fail to realize that in the Holy Day months—first and seventh months—you not only have the new moon, but you have to have the fullest illumination of the full moon for the 15<sup>th</sup>. All of the adjustments are based on coming to those two things.

Now then, do you realize that there are 1,000 variations of the moon in its orbit? From it’s apogee to its perigee—distances from the Earth. Did you know there are times when the full moon comes on the 13<sup>th</sup> day? You have to postpone two days so it will be on the 15<sup>th</sup>? There are so many things that are

so precise, and the patterns are so marvelous that I can tell you with full assurance that every one of those teachers who have a variation of the calendar, from the Calculated Hebrew Calendar, *are having their own private calendar!*

When they're doing that—because you see how absolutely perfect that the Calculated Hebrew Calendar is in determining the Feast days—you will know that they are creating *their own* feasts.

In 1-Kings 12 we find one of these “desiring to be teachers of *the* law... [there he is] ...neither understanding what they are saying... [which they don't] ...nor what they are strongly affirming.”

1-Kings 12:25: “And Jeroboam built Shechem on Mount Ephraim and lived on it, and went from there and built Penuel. And Jeroboam said in his heart... [I've got to keep this thing together] ...‘Now, the kingdom may well return to the house of David! If this people go up to do sacrifice in the house of the LORD at Jerusalem, then shall the heart of this people turn again to their lord, to Rehoboam king of Judah, and they shall kill me and return again to Rehoboam king of Judah.’ Then the king took counsel...” (vs 25-28). He had a political expedience.

Let me tell you something, brethren: *councils or boards do not equal righteousness*. What if you have a council filled with fools? Is there wisdom in that council? *I've sat on boards like that!* Think of it, most of these councils are *political* things. Either it agrees with the Word of God, *or not*. That's what it gets down to!

Verse 28: “Then the king took counsel, and made two calves *of* gold and said to them [the people], ‘It is too much for you to go up to Jerusalem....’” Haven't you heard that before?

- Well, this is too hard to do! You don't have to do that any longer! You don't have to wash feet anymore! They just did that back then because they had dirty, dusty streets and they went in sandals, but we are civilized; we go in cars and we have shoes and socks, so we don't have to do that. Besides, you take a bath before you come, don't you?
- It's too hard to keep the Feast at the regular time; wouldn't it be nicer to have it in August when all of the kids are out of school. How would you like to have it the second week in August, wouldn't that be all right?
- It's too hard for you to put leaven out of your home; you really don't need to put leaven out of your homes. Just be unleavened in your heart and God will

understand.

I've found this with leaven, a simple little test as to why we put leaven out of our homes: *Because God said so, that's why!* I've also seen that those who don't put leaven out of their homes, within a year or two they don't have a clue as to what sin is—period!

“...‘It is too much for you to go up to Jerusalem. Behold your gods, O, Israel, who brought you up out of the land of Egypt!’ And he set the one in Bethel, and he put the other in Dan” (vs 28-29)—in the north and in the south.

Verse 30: “And this thing became a sin, for the people went to worship before the one, even to Dan.” I imagine that they had music, pageantry, and the king was the one doing it; he was the high priest. I imagine that they had ‘tear jerking’ kinds of songs and rousing songs. Just like when you watch the Olympics—totally pagan by the way—with all the ceremonies that they have. But they can be rousing.

We watched the 1984 Olympics in Los Angeles and here were the Americans, the last ones to come in, with the American flag and playing the national anthem and Ronald Reagan was there and gave the welcome, and the hair stood up on the back of your neck. It was just wonderful and everyone was crying and you felt so good! *It was all pagan!* That's what Jeroboam did! No question about it!

Verse 31: “And he made houses *of worship* on the high places...” He setup his own theological seminary. ‘Let's have a college.’

“...and made priests of the lowest of the people...” (v 31). You've all experienced that. What happens when the lowest ones are made ministers at age 21!

“...who were not the sons of Levi. And Jeroboam ordered a feast **in the eighth month...**” (vs 31-32). That's convenient, all the crops are in. That's nice, just think of that, think how convenient that is!

“...on the fifteenth day of the month, like the feast that *is* in Judah. And he offered upon the altar. So, he did in Bethel, sacrificing to the calves that he had made. And he placed in Bethel the priests of the high places, which he had made. And he offered upon the altar, which he had made in Bethel on the fifteenth day of the eighth month, in the month, **which he had devised out of his own heart...**” (vs 32-33).

All of these calendar propositions are devices of Satan the devil.

(go to the next track)

That's what all these calendar things are. I remember about 10 miles from where we were in

Destin, they had a feast where they had three Holy Days—ten days long:

- Welcome, brethren, to the Feast of Tabernacles for those of you who believe that this is the first day.
- Next day: Welcome, brethren, to the Feast of Tabernacles...
- Third day: Welcome to all you other brethren who have come according to the Calculated Hebrew Calendar. For you this is the first day of the Feast of Tabernacles

You could stutter and do better than that! Then you have the Last Great Day, *three days!* It becomes insane because they *devise all these things out of their own heart!* This is foolishness and nonsense that the people of God have been put through, in addition to all the hurt and harm!

This is the greatest example of someone who doesn't know what he's talking about, and strongly affirming something of which he knows nothing about. The reason I say that is because we are coming to a very important section concerning law and proper teaching. That's why I showed how all the Law and the Prophets hang on the Law of God.

1-Timothy 1:8: "Now we know that the Law is good..." all Protestants pay attention. Paul also said that it is Holy, it is spiritual, it is righteous (Rom. 7). We also know that:

- all of the commandments of God are righteousness
- all the commandments of God are truth
- all the laws of God are truth
- all the precepts of God, concerning all thing are altogether right in everything

So, when Paul says that "...the Law is good **if anyone uses it lawfully**" (v 8)—there's a proper application of it. What happens when you have a lot of these Protestant doctrines? *They're not using the Law lawfully!*

One of our ministers was talking to a Church of Christ minister and our minister said, 'Let's study and find out where it says the first day of the week is the day we ought to worship on. If you can prove it from the Bible, I'll come and worship with you.' *Never heard from him again!* To say that Sunday is the day of worship is using the Law unlawfully, because God never said so. **God didn't say:**

- remember the Sabbath Day if it's convenient
- keep it Holy if you think you should

NO! **He said:** 'Remember the Sabbath Day to keep it

Holy, because I want you to learn something. In six days the Lord made the heaven and Earth and all that is in them, all the sea and everything that there is. He rested the seventh day and sanctified the seventh day, therefore, you shall keep the seventh day! That's using the Law lawfully; any other way is not lawfully.

Verse 9: "Understanding this: that law is not enacted for a righteous man..." If you are keeping the laws, do you have anything enacted upon you as a penalty? *No!*

Example: You cannot be arrested for speeding if you're not speeding. You cannot be thrown in jail for murder if you haven't murdered—except if you live in the United States and they make a wrong raid on a wrong house. That may happen to you. But nevertheless, the law was made to be enacted for the *lawless!* The *lawless* is a broad statement. Let's combine the nonsensical teachers and the lawless together:

Paul prefaces all of this, because what he has to say afterward is to bring sound doctrine and stability and truth to the Church.

Matt. 7 is talking about those false prophets who think they are doing good. There are going to be a lot of surprises in that day. I think Benny Henn is going to be one of them, and Billy Graham, Jerry Falwell and maybe Garner Ted Armstrong will be, as well as others.

Matthew 7:21—Jesus said: "Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; but the one who is doing the will of My Father, Who *is* in heaven." That's quite a statement! *The will of God!*

What is the prayer that we are to pray? *Our Father, Who art in heaven, hallowed be Your name, Your will be done on Earth as it is in heaven!* We're praying for the will of God.

What these guys are doing is doing *their will* and attaching the name of God to it. That's why they have to have a hierarchy, because they don't understand the love of God and they have to have command and control.

I've also learned by experience: People come in where there is the love of God and their motives are to try and take over, and there's nothing for them to take over. I know in one case that the whole fellowship group rose up in righteous indignation and said, 'Bye-bye!'

They're even going to talk back to God, v 22: "Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy through Your name?....'"—on television and radio stations, in magazines, booklets

and everything like that. How about the man who wrote the book *88 Reasons Why Christ will Return in 1988*? That was supposed to be on Rosh Hashanah—Feast of Trumpets. He strongly affirmed it. What happened? *Didn't happen!* That was years ago. So, he immediately got out a book and said there were 89 reasons why Christ would return in 1989. *Never happened!*

“...And *did we not* cast out demons through Your name? And *did we not* perform many works of power through Your name?” And then I will confess to them, ‘**I never knew you.** Depart from Me, you who work lawlessness’” (vs 22-23).

They are breaking the Law all the while they are taking the name of Christ. The Law of God is going to be enacted upon the lawless. That’s a broad spectrum! How broad can that be? *Very broad!*

1-Timothy 1:9: “...but for *the* lawless and disobedient...” Disobedient to what? *Anything that’s contrary to the will of God, the laws of God, the statutes of God, the judgments of God!*

“...for *the* ungodly and sinful...” (v 9). We’re covering a lot of ground here. Is the Law enacted? *Yes!*

“...for *the* unholy and profane, for slayers of fathers and slayers of mothers, for murderers, for fornicators, for homosexuals, for kidnappers, for liars, for perjurers, and for any other thing *that* is opposed to sound doctrine” (vs 9-10).

What does this tell us? ***Sound doctrine is based upon the laws and commandments of God!*** That’s what sound doctrine is based upon. Whenever people get away from sound doctrine, what happens? *They start getting away from the laws and commandments of God!* It’s that simple!

This is really something for us to learn. When Paul is getting in here and prefacing for how to run a church, this becomes very important for us to understand. One of the things we need is ***sound doctrine!*** Sound doctrine does divide the *false* brethren from *true* brethren; the wheat from the chaff; the wheat from the tares. True doctrine for brethren united with the Spirit of God binds them together, because true doctrine is based upon:

- faith
- hope
- love
- the laws and commandments of God

I think that if we apply all of these things, and we really are living these things, then the time is going to come when God is going to add to us in a way whereby we’re going to be able to help people. Listen, most of the people in the world right now *are*

*suffering from lawlessness!* Should they come to the Church of God and find *lawlessness?* *No!*

- they need stability
- they need hope
- they need love

Therefore, all sound doctrine is based upon those things and the commandments of God. That is sound right doctrine. This is what God wants us to know; He doesn’t want us to be in doubt:

1-John 2:3: “And by this ***standard we know*** that we know Him [Christ]: ***if...***” The onus is upon *us*. God is perfect; you don’t give any qualifiers to God. You don’t say, ‘God, ***if*** You are perfect...’ We are the ones who have the weakness, so the ***if***, the condition, is to us.

“...***if*** we keep His commandments. The one who says, ‘I know Him,’ and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the Truth is not in him” (vs 3-4). He is a *lawless* person because he’s not keeping the commandments of God. Therefore, the Law will be enacted upon him for his sins.

What does it say in the book of Numbers? *Be sure your sins will find you out!* Then He qualifies it even more.

Verse 5: “On the other hand, *if* anyone is keeping His Word... [the entire message of Christ] ...truly in this one the love of God ***is being perfected...***” Brethren, that’s what we want to do in the fellowship groups and congregations with those who are with the Christian Biblical Church of God. That you are being perfected in:

- love
- hope
- faith
- growing spiritually

That we can reach out an help whomever God sends. I think the time is going to come when the Church is going to grow, and it’s going to grow because of everyone reaching out to his neighbor—personal evangelism. I think that’s going to come, and we’re going to try and have the tools, like the book *The Seven General Epistles*. That will be very helpful. That means:

- you have to know the Word of God
- you have to understand the Truth
- you have to be able to explain it

That’s how people are convicted. Actually, the Worldwide Church of God truly grew more because of people reaching out personally to others than it did by the radio. By the time they got to television, the message was already watered down enough that it didn’t grow very much after that.

If that is the case, just think of what can be done to help people. We're in such a situation now that who wants to trust someone 3,000 miles away out there in California? But they will trust someone whom they know and they can see. That's why your love of God and conversion will become very, very important.

"...By this *means* we know that we are in Him. Anyone who claims to dwell in Him is obligating himself also to walk even as He Himself walked" (vs 5-6). Then John talks about the *new commandment* and he talks about the *old commandment*. There's really no *new* commandment, but, yes there is, Christ gave one: *Love one another as I have loved you. That's how your love is perfected!* Really loving and serving one another. That takes a lot of work.

God will put us in situations where we will be confronted with the situation that we will have to love people that we normally really wouldn't want to even bother with. What about Christ? Christ loved all of us! He died for us! That's His love! He said, 'Love one another as I have loved you.'

1-Timothy 1:11: "According to the Gospel of the glory of the blessed God, with which I was entrusted." It's all contained in the Gospel. Do you want to know what the doctrines are? *They're all right here in the Old Testament and the New Testament!*

Notice Paul's humility, v 12: "And I thank Jesus Christ our Lord, Who has empowered me, that He counted me faithful, putting *me* into the ministry." Not self-appointed! Paul was the last one to self-appoint himself. Remember how he was converted: tooling on his way to Damascus and all of a sudden BAM! he's knocked off his horse right on the way. *God* put him in the ministry!

In the local congregations, we'll talk about that when we come to 1-Tim. 3, where there are those who truly have the fruits of the Spirit, who truly are serving in the way that God shows that someone who should be an elder should be, then the congregation needs to note that they need to recommend that man for ordination.

Also, I'll talk about some of the mistakes we made in Biblical in ordaining men. It led to great problems! Paul talks about this to Timothy a little later on. Now Paul is talking about himself:

Verse 13: "Who was previously a blasphemer and a persecutor and a violent person..." That's a strong translation, but that's what it means. In order to go out and do what he did to men, women and children, you would have to be a wantonly violent person. That's what Paul was.

"...but I obtained mercy because I did *it* ignorantly in unbelief" (v 13). Yet, there are some people who say that Paul was a Pharisee,' so therefore, we ought to follow what the Pharisees do.' *Nonsense!* He renounced that totally! He totally renounced being a Pharisee!

There again, if you have eyes to see and ears to hear, and discernment to understand that if someone says that Jesus was a Pharisee, you know that's not true. There are some who believe that, but that is ludicrous! *Jesus was never a Pharisee!* Not by the wildest stretch of the imagination. Read what He said about the Pharisees: *Woe to you scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!* (Matt. 23).

How did Paul view his past? Again, we're going to see the principle that *you can't accomplish spiritual things by physical means!*

Philippians 3:4: "Though I might also have *reason* to trust in *the* flesh. If any other thinks he has *cause* to trust in *the* flesh, I *have* much more." You want to get into bragging rights, all right, 'I'll tell you; top this if you can':

Verse 5: "Circumcised on *the* eighth day; of *the* race of Israel, from *the* tribe of Benjamin, a Hebrew of Hebrews; with respect to law, a Pharisee... [of the strictest sect (Acts 26)] ...with respect to zeal, persecuting the Church; with respect to righteousness that *is* in law, blameless" (vs 5-6). *You couldn't find anything wrong with me!*

Verse 7: Yet, the things that were gain to me, these things I have counted *as* loss for the sake of Christ.... [trash the whole thing] ...But then truly, I count all things to be loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord; for Whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and **count *them* as dung**... [a big pile of 'skubalon' over here] ...that I may gain Christ and may be found in Him, not having my own righteousness..." (vs 7-9). It doesn't matter what you do unless it's Christ in you doing it; that's what's important.

"...which *is derived* from law, but that *righteousness* which *is* by *the* faith of Christ... [Christ's own faith in him; possessive in the Greek] ...**the righteousness of God that is based on faith that I may know Him**..." (vs 9-10). Notice how focused Paul was in what he was doing.

- this is what needs to be in the Church
- this is what needs to be in the fellowship and congregation

That we are all focused on that one thing!

Verse 10: "That I may know Him and the power of His resurrection, and the fellowship of His sufferings..." Paul suffered so much that he

understood the suffering of Christ perhaps more than any other man, because of what he suffered; more than the apostles who saw Jesus crucified.

“...being conformed to His death; if by any means... [lawful and legal, of course] ...I may attain unto the resurrection of the dead; not as though I have already received...” (vs 10-12). You can never say you’re perfected in the flesh until you come to the end, as we will see in 2-Tim., where he says, ‘I have fought the good fight, waged a good warfare and now there’s a crown of life laid up for me and for all of those who love Christ’s coming.’

At this point he hadn’t, but he says, ‘I follow after.’ That’s where we are in everything we do; we keep following after.

“...or have already been perfected; but I am striving, so that I may also lay hold on that for which I also was laid hold of by Christ Jesus. Brethren, I do not count myself as having attained; but *this* one thing *I do*—**forgetting the things that are behind...**” (vs 12-13). Listen!

- Can you mentally undo anything that has already occurred in the past? *No!*
- Can you lie awake at night and think about it, and think you’re going to change a single, solitary thing? *No!*

You may have someone you can go and repent to tomorrow, if you remember what you did yesterday, but Paul is talking about all those things that are *behind!* Paul had to put out of his mind all the tears, crying and sorrow of all of those he arrested and put in chains and bonds and led down to Jerusalem to be killed—all of those Christians to renounce their faith.

He had to put out of his mind the very thought of Stephen being stoned before his very eyes, when he was holding Stephen’s cloak and was consenting to his death, saying, ‘Yeah, throw those stones; get him.’ He had a lot to put out of his mind. We need to do the same thing. We can’t be living in the past. We can’t be living back there. Yes, we can look back and say that we learned this lesson and that lesson, and the other lesson. Yes, let’s be aware today so we don’t do what we did then. But as far as the personal sins and suffering and things that he went through, he says, ‘I put all of that behind me day-by-day.’

“...and reaching forth... [pressing forth, with force and pressure spiritually speaking that we enter into the Kingdom of God] ...to the things that are ahead, **I press toward the goal for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus**” (vs 13-14).

Then Paul gives us some hope. Have you

ever wanted to be perfect? Like now? This is the closest you can come to it if you have this attitude:

Verse 15: “So then, let as many as *be* perfect be of this mind.... [here’s a promise]: ...And if *in* anything you are otherwise minded, God will reveal even this to you.” Quite a promise—isn’t it? *Because God wants you in His kingdom!*

Verse 16: “Nevertheless, *in regard* to that which we have attained, let us walk by the same rule, let us be of the same mind. Brethren, be imitators together of me, and bear in mind those who walk in this way, as you have us *for* an example. (For many walk *contrary*... [this ties right back to 1-Tim.] ...I have often told you *of* them, and I tell you now *with* weeping, *they are* the enemies of the cross of Christ; whose end *is* destruction, whose god *is* their belly, and whose glory *is* in their shame; *for* they mind earthly things.)” (vs 16-19). We are to be different. Our conversation, politics, allegiance is in heaven!

Verse 20: “But for us, the commonwealth of *God* exists in *the* heavens, from where also we are waiting for *the* Savior, *the* Lord Jesus Christ, Who will transform our vile bodies, that they may be conformed to His glorious body...” (vs 20-21). Don’t worry about it if your body is getting old, decrepit, wearing out and hurting.

I have a bad hip that I’m limping along with. It’s improving; I have to do the exercise and live with the pain and things like that. But I tell you what, to see that we we’re going to have this kind of glorious body that Jesus Christ has, the pain is nothing! Those things are nothing! Count them as *nothing!*

“...according to the inner working of His own power, *whereby He is able* to subdue all things to Himself” (v 21). That is a very inspiring chapter, brethren. It ties right in with 1-Tim. 1 in showing the difference of the ministry. Now let’s come back and see the humility of the Apostle Paul:

1-Timothy 1:13: “...I obtained mercy because I did *it* ignorantly in unbelief. But the grace of our Lord abounded exceedingly with *the* faith and love that *is* in Christ Jesus” (vs 13-14). Isn’t that something? Would you consider taking your #1 enemy and converting him to become your #1 apostle? Think of that! That’s contrary to human reasoning, but God did it, because *nothing is impossible for God!*

Verse 15: “*This is* a faithful saying, and worthy of full acceptance: that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief.”

The Pharisees asked, ‘Why do You and

Your disciples eat and drink with publicans and harlots?" Jesus said, 'I have come to save sinners, those who are whole need not a physician.' He was being very cynical back to them. They considered themselves perfect and whole and needed nothing.

But Paul said, "...of whom I am chief." He really understood the magnitude of what he did. I imagine that he repented many times over and over again. I imagine that in some of his dreams at night he would see the faces of those he was causing to be beaten and taken off to jail and killed and all of that sort of thing. I just imagine so.

Verse 16: "But for this reason I was shown mercy in order that in me first Jesus Christ might demonstrate all long-suffering, for an example to those who would afterwards believe on Him unto eternal life." If God can forgive him, who did that, what sin do you have that God cannot forgive? That's what he's really saying.

Verse 17: "Now to the King of eternity, *the* incorruptible, invisible, *and* only wise God, *be* honor and glory into the ages of eternity. Amen. **This charge I am personally committing to you...**" (vs 17-18). He's personally committing to Timothy a lot of things from here on out on how to take care of the Church, how to run it when the Apostle Paul wasn't there.

"...my son Timothy, in accordance with the prophecies that were made long ago concerning you; in order that by them you yourself might wage a good war, holding to *the* faith and a good conscience. For some, having cast aside *a good conscience*, have made shipwreck in regard to the faith" (vs 18-19). When a ship is wrecked, it's gone!

Paul names them, v 20: "Of whom are Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I turned over to Satan in order that they may learn not to blaspheme." This shows some of the authority. The authority to disfellowship, and as he points out, that the congregation is involved in disfellowshipment (1-Cor. 5); they all know about it.

Not like we've had it in the past when someone gets crossways with the minister and he disfellowships him and makes an announcement on the Sabbath and everyone gasps and says, 'I can't believe that.'

'Don't ask any questions about it, brethren, it's already over and done with.' So, you never know. Then years later you find out that that person had been home keeping the Sabbath, keeping the Holy Days, loving God. I've seen many cases that way. That's why all disfellowshipment must have the authority of the ministry and the authority of the fellowship together, to do it at the same time; that everybody knows.

Now, when they are disfellowshipped, with the exception of those who have committed the sins like Hymeneus and Alexander, they are to be treated as brethren who have gone astray, hopefully to be restored; not to be shunned like people did with our former fellowship. That if you see them crossing the street you would turn and go the other way. *No!* Nothing to do with that! Maybe with some kindness and love they can be restored.

But that's part of the authority. We're going to see quite a bit of authority here in 1-Timothy for:

- for Truth
- for love
- for faith
- for hope
- for sound doctrine

All of the authority to bring stability to the local fellowships and the congregations.

1-Timothy 2:1: "I exhort, therefore, first of all that supplications, prayers, intercessions, *and* thanksgivings be made on behalf of all men." It's not wrong to pray for those who are in the world, in a right way.

- he doesn't say to pray that they may be converted
- he doesn't say to pray that they may come into your fellowship

Paul says, v 2: "For kings and all who are in authority, **in order that we may lead a quiet and peaceful life in all Godliness and respectability.**" What does this do for the sovereignist's movement? *It eliminates it!* They are not living peacefully and quietly in Godliness. They are challenging the government; they are striving to get back to the Constitution once delivered.

Please understand this: the Constitution of the United States—though it's better than any other constitution of any other nation on earth—it is still a government of this world. Though it may have many principles that you can find in the Bible, it is still a worldly government. Part of the goal of the sovereignists is to get back to the constitution once delivered. So therefore, you give up your social security number, your driver's license, anything to do with the government, you have nothing whatsoever to do with them. If you can trade in gold and silver, you do that; you even renounce the currency.

Then they became very hypocritical: they did the same thing that the Federal Reserve did, they went out and got debt warrants and used those for collateral to try and create their own currency. That's what happened in Montana. Remember the

'Freemen' up there; they had \$200-million in debt warrants. That's why the government was after them.

- Were they living a quiet and peaceful life? *No!*
- Were they living in accordance with the laws of God? *No!*
- Did they claim they were? *Yes!*

This takes care of the sovereignist's movement. We should not be doing that.

Verse 3: "For this *is* good and acceptable before God our Savior, Who desires all men to be saved and to come to *the* knowledge of *the* Truth"—*according to the plan of God*, in His time. He's not calling all men now. We know the whole purpose of the second resurrection. We know the whole purpose of the Millennium, as we keep the Feast of Tabernacles, and so forth.

This is covering a whole lot here. God will effect that to the highest degree possible. You can rest assured of that.

Verse 5: "For there *is* one God, and one Mediator between God and men—the Man Christ Jesus, Who gave Himself *as* a ransom for all, the testimony *of which is to be preached* in its appointed times" (vs 5-6). I think that is an interesting meaning in the Greek.

What are the *appointed* times? *The Passover and Holy Days, to be preached in its appointed times!* We are to preach in season and out of season.

Verse 7: "For this purpose I was ordained a preacher and an apostle (I speak *the* truth in Christ—I do not lie), a teacher of *the* Gentiles in faith and truth. Therefore, I desire that men everywhere pray, lifting up Holy hands without anger and *evil* opinions" (vs 7-8).

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) 1-Timothy 1:1
- 2) Romans 4:17-25
- 3) Romans 5:1-5
- 4) Romans 15:3-13
- 5) 1 Timothy 1:2-5
- 6) Galatians 5:6
- 7) Matthew 22:36-40
- 8) 1 Timothy 1:5-7
- 9) 1 Kings 12:25-33
- 10) 1 Timothy 1:8-9
- 11) Matthew 7:21-23
- 12) 1 Timothy 1:9-10
- 13) 1 John 2:3-6
- 14) 1 Timothy 1:11-13
- 15) Philippians 3:4-21
- 16) 1 Timothy 1:13-20
- 17) 1 Timothy 2:1-8

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Matthew 24
- Romans 15:9-12; 7
- Matthew 23
- Acts 26
- 1 Corinthians 5

#### Also referenced:

- Book: *The Seven General Epistles* by Fred R. Coulter
- Study material: *Calculated Hebrew Calendar* (cbcg.org)

FRC:bo  
Transcribed: 2-23-15

## Pastoral Epistles II

# Role of Women in the Church & The *Created* Family Relationship

(1-Timothy 2:9-15)  
Fred R. Coulter

1-Timothy 2:9: “In like manner also, *let* the women adorn themselves with clothing that shows modesty and discretion, not with *elaborate* braidings of the hair... [piling it up high] or with gold, or pearls, or expensive apparel; but with *that* which is fitting for women who profess to have reverence for God—with good works... [it’s a combination of both] ...Let a woman learn in quietness and be submissive in every respect. For I do not permit a woman to teach, nor to exercise authority over man, but to be in quietness. For Adam was formed first, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived; but the woman came to be in transgression by being deceived. But she shall be saved through the childbearing, if they continue in faith and love and sanctification with self-control” (vs 9-15).

Some of these things really set some of the modern women’s rights groups on edge, and it has been used to put down women by extremely harsh religionists. But that’s not what was intended here at all.

So, we’ll understand a little bit more today what God intended here with this. Let’s first of all understand:

Verse 12: “For I do not permit a woman to teach, nor to exercise authority over man, but to be in quietness.” That is having to do within the Church and the marriage relationship.

1-Corinthians 14 tells us something else concerning women in church, and then we will look at some other things concerning that and how that there are circumstances where women can ask questions and talk in a Bible study. What they had at that time was the men on one side of the congregation and the women on the other side of the congregation. Because of that, some of the women would, either from the balcony call down or from the other side call over to say, ‘What did he say’ because they didn’t have amplification like we have today. This is part of the background as to why he said here:

1-Corinthians 14:34: “Let your women be silent in the churches...” Coupled together with ‘I do not permit a woman to teach,’ therefore, there should be no women preachers. But it’s amazing, it is absolutely amazing how many come along and have

women preachers. Even the Worldwide Church of God went to having women preachers and pastors as they shifted to Sunday and paganized Christianity.

“...for they are not allowed to speak; but they are to be in subjection, exactly as the law says.” (v 34). That can be used in a hierarchical way, in a very harsh way, but that’s not what God intended. We’ll see what God intended in just a little bit.

Verse 35: “And if they wish to learn anything, let them ask their own husbands at home. For it is a shame for a woman to speak in church.”

Let’s put that together with 1-Corinthians 11:1, and here’s the ‘yeah but’ that someone is going to have: “Be imitators of me, exactly as I also *am* of Christ. Now I praise you, brethren, because you have remembered me in all things, and you are keeping the ordinances in the way that I delivered *them* to you. But I want you to understand that the Head of every man is Christ, and *the* head of *the* woman is the man... [if she is married] ...and *the* Head of Christ is God” (vs 1-3).

What we need to understand is that all of these things in relationship to man and woman is a *created* relationship. It’s not a hierarchy, it’s not a partnership, but they—through marriage—are to become one. There are certain things here that is talking about men and women concerning hirelings.

Verse 4: “Every man who has a *covering* on his head when he is praying or prophesying puts his Head to shame.” I think it’s very interesting that in some religions you have to have hats. Either the black flat hat as the Orthodox Jews do, or the yamaka as the Jews and the Catholics do. I don’t know what other religions have, but it’s also a shame for man to have long hair.

Verse 5: “But every woman who has *her* head uncovered when she is praying or prophesying puts her head to shame...”—which is for her husband. But if it says that a woman is not allowed to speak and a woman is to be quiet, how can she be praying or prophesying? We’ll answer that question because it seems to be a contradiction. We’re going to see it is not a contradiction when we understand how it is that women pray and prophesy.

- Obviously, it’s not going to be in a

teaching situation.

- Obviously, it's not going to be with authority over men.

Let's see why this is so, v 7: "For, on the one hand, a man ought not to cover *his* head, since he is *the* image and glory of God; but, on the other hand, *the* woman is *the* glory of man. For *the* man is not of *the* woman, but *the* woman *is of the* man" (vs 7-8). The Greek for *from/of* is 'ek'—meaning *taken out of*. Adam was not created from a rib of Eve. Eve was *created* from the rib of Adam, that's a fact, a *created* relationship. That's what he's talking about here.

Verse 6: "For if a woman is not covered, let her be shorn... [this was a real tricky verse to translate] ...But if *it be* shameful for a woman to be shorn or shaved, let her be covered." This is what we call an oxymoron, which I like to call a 'moryoxon'—meaning that what he is saying, in a very cynical way: "For if a woman is not covered, let her be shorn..."—which means she has hair. "...But if *it be* shameful for a woman to be shorn or shaved, let her be covered"—this has to do while she is praying or prophesying.

What I think it is—speculation—she is not to have her hair stacked up on her head when she is praying or prophesying because when we come down to:

Verse 15: "But if a woman has long hair, it is a glory to her; because the long hair has been given to her instead of a *veil to cover her head*"—so she does not have to have a hat.

Besides, have you ever been to a Protestant church where they wear these big hats, and you sit back there and you try to look around trying to see what's going on; kind of a ridiculous situation. I think that v 6 means that if she's going to be praying and prophesying, that she is to have her long hair down, not up, because then she is in a sense uncovering herself.

"...But if *it be* shameful for a woman to be shorn or shaved, let her be covered" (v 6). If she's shaven and shorn she has no hair at all, then cover her with something until the hair grows out. So, if you have a shaved head—and that's a fad with some of the New Age women—or short hair that is not long, then let her be covered, obviously, until such time that it can grow.

Verse 7: "For, on the one hand, a man ought not to cover *his* head, since he is *the* image and glory of God... [this is telling us that God doesn't have a hat] ...but, on the other hand, *the* woman is *the* glory

of man. For *the* man is not of *the* woman, but *the* woman *is of the* man" (vs 7-8). Again, 'ek' *out from*.

Verse 9: "And also, *the* man was not created for the sake of the woman, but *the* woman for the sake of the man. For this reason, it is necessary for the woman to have a *sign of being under* authority on *her* head because of the angels" (vs 9-10). The authority that she has on her head is her long hair.

Verse 11: "Nevertheless, neither *is the* man separate from *the* woman..."—lest man gets all uppity and starts his great masculinity and put all women down. That's what we did in the Church for a long time; fear and intimidation, using these verses incorrectly. Paul is evening it out and says, 'what is the man without the woman?'

"...nor *the* woman separate from *the* man in *the* Lord. For as the woman *is of the* man, so also the man *is by the* woman; but all things *are of* God" (vs 11-12).

In other words, God arranged it this way. There was Adam and Eve—the first man and woman—then everything came from them. Men can't come along and say, 'we're the greatest thing because God made us first. That's just the order of creation. All other men have been born of women.'

Verse 13: "You judge for yourselves. Is it becoming for a woman to pray to God uncovered?"—or prophesy, because he brings it out earlier.

Verse 14: "Or does not even nature itself teach you that if a man has long hair, it is a shame to him? But if a woman has long hair, it is a glory to her; because the long hair has been given to her instead of a *veil to cover her head*. But if anyone is contentious *over this issue*, we have no such custom, neither *do* the Churches of God" (vs 14-16). This also relates to the Churches of God that do not have the custom of women wearing hats to be covered.

We're going to look and see just exactly how a woman prays and prophesies in just a minute. Now I'm going to read to you a little commentary Spiros Zodhiates on 1-Cor. 11:14:

Paul has pointed out to the Corinthians that a woman should not pray or prophesy with her head uncovered. This was due to the local custom indicating that a woman who had short hair, or a shaven head, was immoral.

The same thing still applies today.

Most of the short-haired tend to indicate people who follow the customs of

Lesbians, though many of them don't know that.

Not all; some of them just go to the hairdresser and the hairdresser says, 'Oh, let's give you a cute little pixie cut.' Well, it will grow back.

It is an unnatural appearance. In 1-Corinthians 1:26-27 Paul describes Lesbianism as a deviation from the natural usage of the woman's body into that which is against nature.

In v 27 Paul speaks of homosexuality as being unnatural.

So, it does reflect to that. It is known that that is true, but most people today are even afraid to preach it or teach it, lest someone be offended. If you be offended, then go be offended. You're not offended at me, you are offended *at God!* I didn't make anybody, I didn't write it. I may have translated it, but that's just the way it is.

God told us how and why He created man and woman. Now, the natural desire is for each member of the opposite gender. This refers to the true nature of things as God has established them.

Obviously, by creation.

"Does not even nature teach you that it is a shame for a man to have long hair?" (1-Cor. 11:14). Implying the nature as God formed it.

Many people today have a perverted nature, which is not according to God's original plan (Rom. 1:26). It is true that there are homosexuals and lesbians that are attracted to members of their sex, but this does not coincide with God's original plan for mankind. This behavior is demonstrative of a fallen nature.

By the way, one-third of all teenage suicides today are from those who are homosexual—male and female—because it's a completely perverted and unnatural life form. We are to learn from those things.

On the other hand, if a man has long hair, what does nature teach us if a man wears his hair long? It is translated *if*, the conjunction of reality meaning there are actually some men in Corinth who grew their hair long just as there are in our day today.

The verb translated *grows* long hair... means *to have* long hair. So, the Greek-

English Lexicon says this: "For men to wear long hair is considered a sign of foppishness, foolishness, folly and desolant habits.

So, the Greek word 'komao' carries with it the connotation of a careless attitude, the evidence of which in men is long hair.

I'm reading this so that you know that I'm not the one who has this opinion. He's a Greek expert who knows the Greek and understands what the original means.

Paul says that if a man has long hair it is a dishonor to him.

Dishonor derives from the privation of *honor* or *respect*.

A man ought to be admired and respected for his strength, which is a gift of God.

A created relationship.

A man who dishonors himself by wearing long hair shows lack of appreciation for the gift that God has given him. The woman, on the other hand, compliments the man with her softness and her beauty. The outward appearance of both men and women should reflect their acceptance of God's design for their unique identities.

Modern society notwithstanding! We are not of the world, we are not part of the world, so we are not to be reflective of the world.

For a man to look like a woman is to declare that he considers himself womanly; that he rejects the role that God has for him to play.

And to voluntarily place oneself *under*: the verb is used to describe the relationship of woman to man, and especially of a wife to her husband, being *under* her husband; to voluntarily place oneself *under*.

A wife abides under the care and protection of her husband. In this relationship a woman's glory comes from her willingness to voluntarily submit to her husband, and her husband's glory comes when he loves his wife as Christ loves the Church.

Those who study the Bible also have some truth and knowledge concerning this. I'm sure it's really quite a touchy issue with some people. Just understand that it's not some man telling you how to wear your hair, if you're a woman. It's **God** Who is telling you that He has created you for a special purpose, and for a special relationship. **He** wants the distinction

quite plain between men and women, and that things be done *His* way in orderliness.

Now let's look at some of these things a little bit more, and let's understand what it means for a woman to pray or prophesy. This probably has to do with public praying and public prophesying.

- What kind would that be if she's not allowed to speak? *That presents a problem!*
- Do you think there is any solution to it? *I think there is!*

You search the Bible everywhere and nowhere do you find a woman standing up preaching—Old Testament or New Testament. Exo. 15 is a very important chapter that tells us how the women prayed and prophesied.

### **Miriam the Prophetess:**

Exodus 15:1: "Then Moses and the children of Israel sang this song to the LORD, and spoke, saying, 'I will sing to the LORD, for He has triumphed gloriously...'" Here is Moses and all the congregation of Israel singing.

"...*the* horse and his rider He has thrown into the sea. The LORD *is* my strength and song, and He has become my salvation. This is my God, and I will glorify Him, my father's God, and I will exalt Him. The LORD *is* a Man of war; Jehovah *is* His name" (vs 1-3).

After he finishes the whole thing, he ends up with, v 18: "The LORD shall reign forever and ever."

Verse 20: "And **Miriam the prophetess**, the sister of Aaron... [here's how she prayed and prophesied]: ...took a drum in her hand. And all the women went out after her with drums and with dances." So, when the whole congregation was done, then they had a victory dance with the women leading it, and singing.

Verse 21: "And Miriam answered them, 'Sing to the LORD, for He has triumphed gloriously. The horse and his rider He has flung into the sea.'" There's an example of a woman prophesying publicly, which is through song/singing. That's how a woman prays and prophesies publicly.

### **Deborah the Judge:**

Let's look at the case of Deborah; here's an interesting case. It shows that a woman can also carry out civil duties, because a judge is a *judge*.

- a judge was not a priest
- a judge was not a Levite

- a judge was not teaching to the population:
  - ✓ the ways of God
  - ✓ the laws of God
  - ✓ the commandments of God*as a priest or a Levite would do.*

Judges 4:4: "And Deborah, a prophetess, the wife of Lapidoth, judged Israel at that time. And she lived under the palm tree of Deborah between Ramah and Bethel in Mount Ephraim. And the children of Israel came up to her for judgment" (vs 4-5). This shows that a woman can hold a civil office.

- God is not for putting women down
- God is not for oppressing women
- God gave them a mind and brain

Some of the biggest problems happen when someone marries a woman who is smarter than the man. Then he's got to resort to intimidation to keep her in control. You've seen that; *that's not what God wants!*

Verse 6: "And she sent and called for Barak... [the soldier] ...the son of Abinoam out of Kedesh in Naphtali, and said to him, 'Has not the LORD God of Israel commanded, saying, "Go and draw toward Mount Tabor, and take with you ten thousand men of the children of Naphtali and of the children of Zebulun? And I will draw Sisera to you, the captain of Jabin's army, at the river Kishon, together with his chariots and his multitude. And I will deliver him into your hands.'" And Barak said to her..." (vs 6-8).

She was the civil authority; she was obviously under the authority of her husband. It talks about who her husband was. It doesn't say anywhere that she was out from under the authority of her husband.

Verse 8: "And Barak said to her 'If you will go with me, then I will go. But if you will not go with me, I will not go.'" We have here a weak, cowardly man. God is making a lesson out of it.

Verse 9: "And she said, 'I will surely go with you. But the journey that you take shall not be for your honor... [this is going to be a dishonor to you] ...for the LORD shall sell Sisera into the hand of a woman.' And Deborah arose and went with Barak to Kedesh." Because she had to go, she said, 'All right, this is going to be a glory to a woman, and shame to you.' Sometimes in family relationships and in the Church it's a shame that that same kind of situation exists.

Let's see how Deborah prophesied after the

battle. Very much like Miriam and the other women.

Judges 5:1: “Then Deborah and Barak the son of Abinoam sang on that day, saying, ‘Praise the LORD for the avenging of Israel when the people willingly offered themselves. Hear, O kings. Give ear, O princes. I, *even* I, will sing to the LORD, I will sing to the LORD God of Israel’” (vs 1-3). Then you can go through and read the whole thing about how it was singing.

When there is public prophesying by a woman it is in the form of singing. That’s why when we have special music, what do you generally sing? *A Psalm, which is a prayer!* or *You sing a praise to God!* That’s what it’s talking about here. It’s not talking about that women sit in the office of an overseer or teacher. It says, ‘I do not allow a woman to teach.’

Let’s see again how a woman prophesied, and it’s recorded in the Scriptures. Since it’s recorded in the Scriptures, it would have to be publicly known, otherwise, how would it get there?

### **Hannah:**

1-Samuel 2:1: “And Hannah prayed and said...” This is an out loud prayer, because she was right up there, and had just given Samuel to Eli the high priest.

“...‘My heart rejoices in the LORD, my horn is exalted in the LORD. My mouth is enlarged over my enemies because I rejoice in Your salvation. *There is none Holy as the LORD, for there is none beside You. Neither is there any rock like our God. Talk no more so very proudly. Remove arrogance out of your mouth...*’” (vs 1-3).

Who is she referring to? *To the first wife of her husband*, because he had two wives, and the first one had all the children, but Hannah was barren. Now she is saying that God did this: ‘I had a child for God and gave it to God, God has triumphed!’ We’re going to see that she had other sons and daughters after that, too.

“...for the LORD is a God of knowledge, and by Him actions are weighed. The bows of the mighty *are* broken, and they that stumbled are girded with strength. *They that were* full have hired themselves out for bread, and they that were hungry have ceased to *hunger*; yea, while even **the barren has borne seven...**” (vs 3-5). This is actually a prophecy of the seven churches, because she only had six children.

“...and she who had many sons has languished” (v 5). That’s a prophesy of the ending

of the Old Covenant. There were many more Israelites who were brought physically into existence than have been converted; no question about it.

Verse 6: “The LORD kills and makes alive. He brings down to the grave and brings up. The LORD takes away, and He gives riches; He brings low; yea, He lifts up high. He raises up the poor out of the dust; He lifts up the needy from the dunghill...” (vs 6-8). She is talking about herself, because that’s how she felt.

When you go back and read how she was there praying and the bitterness of her soul because she had no children. She felt like a dung heap and the first wife was constantly coming after her and saying, ‘Oh, you don’t have any children, you have no favor with God. Look at all the children I have, aren’t I great?’ Hannah’s husband could hardly console her, saying, ‘You always have me.’ *Yea, but I want a child!* So, this is quite a triumphant song!

“...to set *them* among princes; yea, He causes them to inherit a throne of honor, for to the LORD *belong* the pillars of the earth; and He sets the habitable world upon them. He keeps the feet of His saints, and the wicked are silenced in darkness; for by strength shall no man prevail. The foes of the LORD shall be broken to pieces. He thunders in the heavens upon them. The LORD shall judge the ends of the earth. And He shall give strength to His king, and exalts the horn of His anointed” (vs 8-10).

That’s quite a prophetic prayer. It has to do with Christ, the Millennium, with the return of Christ and putting down all the enemies.

Verse 11: “And Elkanah went to Ramah to his house. And the child served the LORD before Eli the priest.”

Verse 20: “And Eli blessed Elkanah and his wife, and said, ‘May the LORD give you seed of this woman for the loan which is loaned to the LORD.’ And they went to their own home. And the LORD visited Hannah so that she conceived, and she bore three sons and two daughters....” (vs 20-21). That’s five children, plus Samuel is six.

So, when you come back here and it says, the barren has born seven, that has to do with the seven churches. We’ll see that in just a minute. “...And the child Samuel grew before the LORD” (v 21).

Let’s see where it is referred to, having to do with the Church. While the Old Covenant was in effect, the Church was barren. It brought forth none because the Church did not come into existence until after Christ was resurrected.

Yes, there were some few of the Prophets and so forth that will be in the first resurrection, but that was not the spiritual church as we know it today. Gal. 4 refers right back to that same thing we read in 1-Sam. 2.

Galatians 4:27: “For it is written, ‘Rejoice, O barren who did not bear!.... [direct reference to Hannah] ...Break forth and cry, *you* who were not travailing, because many more *are* the children of the desolate than of her who has the husband.’” At this time the table was being turned.

Verse 28: “Now we, brethren, like Isaac, are *the* children of promise.” Tie that in with Rev. 2 & 3 and how many churches do we have? *Seven!* So, there’s the tie in to the one who was barren.

### **Mary and Elizabeth:**

Let’s see what Mary and Elizabeth did. Mary also prophesied. In this case it was not a public thing in the sense that she was in any congregated meeting, but it was public inasmuch as she was with Elizabeth, her cousin, who also was about six months along with John the Baptist.

Luke 1:39: “And Mary rose up in those days *and* went with haste into the hill country, to a city of Judah, and entered the house of Zacharias and greeted Elizabeth. Now it came to pass *that* when Elizabeth heard Mary’s greeting, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elizabeth was filled with *the* Holy Spirit” (vs 39-41). There are two things here:

1. a baby six months in the womb is called a *baby*

And it is true that *abortion is wrong!* It’s going to lead to the violence that happens, because some people want to take the law into their own hands. Neither one are correct. There are some people who think the doctor who killed thousands of babies got what he deserved. That’s not a judgment for us to render because we’re not part of this world. God is going to have to render that judgment. For a person to take that judgment into their hands and assassinate the man is adding sin upon sin. Once there is conception it is a person. The only difference between a newly conceived infant and us is a matter of growth! Growth in the womb and after birth, that’s the only difference.

2. she was filled with the Holy Spirit

Verse 42: “And she cried out with a loud voice and said... [she was prophesying] ...‘Blessed *are* you among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of your womb. But why is this *happening* to me, that the mother of our Lord should come to me? For behold, as soon as

the sound of your greeting reached my ears, the babe in my womb leaped in exultation. And blessed *is* she who has believed, for there shall be a fulfillment of the things spoken to her from *the* Lord.’ Then Mary said...” (vs 42-46). Here they were to each other; can you imagine what a moment that must have been? Yet, it’s recorded here. This is known as a public thing.

“...‘My soul magnifies the Lord, and my spirit has exulted in God my Savior’” (v 47). Notice her attitude; one of submissiveness.

Verse 48: “‘For He has looked upon the humble estate of His handmaid; for behold, from this time forward all generations shall count me blessed, because the Mighty One has done great things to me, and Holy *is* His name; and His mercy *is* toward those who fear Him, from generation to generation. He has worked strength with His arm; He has scattered *the* haughty in *the* imagination of their hearts. He has put down rulers from thrones, and has exalted *the* lowly. He has filled *the* hungry with good things, and *the* rich He has sent away empty. He has helped His servant Israel, in remembering *His* mercy, exactly as He spoke to our fathers, to Abraham and to his seed forever’” (vs 48-55).

What does this tell us?

- Mary *knew* the Word of God
- she *understood* what was going on
- she was *able to prophesy*, speaking out loud

I don’t suppose that Mary had short hair—do you? *No!* Is she an example that should be followed, without getting into Mary exaltation like the Catholics do? *Absolutely!*

### **Philip’s daughters:**

Philip had three daughters, and his daughter’s prophesied. I think this is quite interesting.

Acts 21:8: “On the next day, Paul and those *of us* who had accompanied him departed *and* came to Caesarea; and we went into the house of Philip the evangelist, who was one of the seven, *and* stayed with him. And this *man* had four virgin daughters who prophesied” (vs 8-9).

In their prophecy, what do you think they did? *I think they prophesied by singing to the congregation!* Why do I say that? *Let’s notice what else happened here!* While Paul was there they did not prophesy, which I think is significant.

Verse 10: “Now, after we had been *there* for

many days, a certain man from Judea came down, a prophet named Agabus.” So, God sent a *man* prophet to tell Paul what was going to happen, rather than use the women there to prophesy. And there were four of them.

Verse 11: “And he came to us and, taking Paul’s belt, bound himself hand and foot, *and* said, ‘Thus says the Holy Spirit: “The Jews in Jerusalem shall bind the man whose belt this is in the same manner, and shall deliver him into *the* hands of *the* Gentiles.”’ And when we heard these things, both we and those of *that* place besought him not to go up to Jerusalem” (vs 11-12). Right here I think this is very interesting. You have four daughters who are noted for their prophesying, which is probably singing.

Yet, God sends a man to bring this prophecy to Paul. If it was the kind of prophecy that would not be singing, why then did God not use the four virgins to bring the prophecy to Paul? *I think this helps substantiate what I’m pointing out here*, that for women to pray or prophesy, it is mostly in singing.

(go to the next track)

I’ve thought on this a long time, and I’ve studied on it and searched the Scriptures out, but ***nowhere in all the Scriptures do you find a woman standing up before a congregation to preach and teach!*** But you find them praying and prophesying publicly. So, when it says in 1-Cor. 11 that if it is a shame for a woman to pray or prophesy with her head uncovered, that means that she is to have her long hair down while she is publicly performing, either praying or prophesying. It doesn’t mean she wears a hat or stacks her hair on top of her head.

### **The Created Relationship**

1-Timothy 2:13<sup>[transcriber’s correction]</sup>: “For Adam was formed first, then Eve.” That’s the order of creation. Let’s go back and look at it, and let’s see what God intended. We’re looking at created relationships.

Note sermon: Day 6—FOT, 1998—on created relationships I think that will help straighten out a lot of problems between husbands and wives and the inner mixing of all of the attitudes of the world. Plus it will help solve some of the problems that were in the Church when it was hierarchy, when everything was a put-down.

Genesis 1:26: “And God said, ‘Let Us make **man** in Our image, after Our likeness...’”—all mankind. Has God made all mankind after Adam and Eve? *Yes, because He created the reproductive*

*process to make it possible!*

You don’t do anything out of yourselves or on your own. If you bear children—wanted or unwanted—it’s because of the process that God gave. Sometimes those who are rejected and unwanted are generally the ones that God chooses later on in life.

“...and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of heaven and over the livestock and over all the earth and over every creeping thing that crawls upon the earth” (v 26). Is that true? Did God create this relationship of the world in man and woman? *Yes!*

Verse 27: “And God created man in His *own* image, in the image of God He created him. He created them male and female.” This is not to say that God is androgynous—male and female. This is a prophecy that there will be women who will be born into the Kingdom of God made after the image of God and still be called *a daughter of God*.

Verse 28: “And God blessed them. And God said to them, ‘Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of heaven and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.’”

Let’s see where God created Eve. We know that God formed man out of the dust of the ground. He took whatever red clay there was and made Adam, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life, and he became a living soul.

Genesis 2:18: “And the LORD God said, ‘*It is not good that the man should be alone. I will make a helper compatible for him*’”—suitable and compatible for him. For what purpose? *That they two may become one*, which shows that it’s not a hierarchy or partnership; it is a ***created relationship*** that God has given.

Verse 19: “And out of the ground the LORD God *had* formed every animal of the field and every fowl of the air—and brought *them* to Adam to see what he would call them...”

We know that God created Adam with full intelligence and knowledge, the ability to think and analyze, and put in his mind a full language. Therefore, it was no big thing for God to confound all the languages at the Tower of Babel. God could, just by command, change all the languages.

Since God changed all the languages, and made all the languages, which language is Holy? *There’s no such thing as a Holy language!* God made them all. There is the Holy Bible, there is the Word of God—written in Hebrew and Greek—

translated in all the languages. But there's no such thing as a Holy language.

"...[He] brought *them* to Adam to see what he would call them. And whatever Adam called *each* living creature that *became* its name" (v 19). Whatever Adam called it, God didn't come along and say, 'Oop, you made a mistake, don't call it that.' So, whatever Adam called it! I wonder what he first called an elephant?

Verse 20: "And Adam gave names to all the livestock, and to the birds of the air, and to every animal of the field but... [here was the lesson: of everything that God had created]: ...there was not found a helper compatible for Adam." Nothing suitable or compatible for him. Wouldn't it be awkward to be married to a giraffe?

Verse 21: "And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall over Adam, and he slept. And He took one of his ribs, and *afterward* closed up the flesh underneath. Then the LORD God made the rib (which He had taken out of the man) into a woman, and He brought her to the man" (vs 21-22). The Hebrew there means that *He built the woman!*

Today there are a lot of women who are ashamed of their bodies. God made it! You don't need to be ashamed of your body; **God created you!** But He did not make you on equal footing with man. He didn't take a separate piece of mud or clay and make you, because God does not want the war between the sexes. He wants *a created relationship* between man and woman, husband and wife, that they become one flesh! That is the whole missing ingredient. For years, brethren, we never understood.

The only way I came to understand it, and the first time I ever preached on it was on day six for the Feast of Tabernacles, because we had been led away from the hierarchy, and we've been led away from 'religion,' to know that we're not to be 'religious' but we have a *way of life*. We are to have *a relationship* with God, which is *a way of life*, not a 'religion.'

That helped open up the understanding if there is not to be a hierarchy from God to us down through the ministry, then why should there be a hierarchy in the family.

Lo and behold, there is the head—the husband—but it is not a hierarchy; it's a *created relationship* in which God expects there to be obedience and submission, the way that God has said, for the wife, as well as the love, nurturing and cherishing that should come from the husband.

But because everything got down to a carnal

level, and a carnal basis, in bringing into much of the counseling of the world on how to have a happy marriage and all this sort of thing—this is mine and this is yours—you have this battle going on. We got everything turned upside down, as well as childrearing, too.

We look at it now—most of us who have grown children—and wish we could go back and change what we did. We can't go back and change it, but at least admit what was wrong and try to help repair it today. What you need to do in your relationship is to understand that it is **a created relationship**, regardless of who you married. God created your husband and God created your wife. That's why going into marriage becomes a very profound undertaking.

It should be done with knowledge, understanding and love—realizing that when there is the marriage, the woman now voluntarily submits herself to her husband—because *that is the will of God* and because she loves God. If she does that, will she have to be beaten down by her husband to be in submission? Will she have to be paddled as some ramrodding evangelist used to brag that he did to his wife. Or will he have to, on the marriage night, take off his trousers and say, 'If you can wear these then put them on, I'm the head of the house'?

All of those things were done! When we heard these things, we thought: 'Oh wow!' And you started spanking your kids at six weeks. A family is also **a created relationship**.

Verse 22: "Then the LORD God made the rib (which He had taken out of the man) into a woman, and He brought her to the man." It's not good for man to be alone; hence it's also not good for the woman to be alone. If one is true, then the other is true.

But once there is a marriage, v 23: "And Adam said, 'This *is* now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh. *She* shall be called Woman because *she* was taken out of... ['ek'] ...Man.' For this reason shall a man leave his father and his mother..." (vs 23-24). This was obviously edited in at a later date because there were no children to leave father and mother at this point. Cain hadn't even been born, yet.

"...and shall cleave to his wife—and **they shall become one flesh**" (v 24). That is *physically, mentally and spiritually* become *one!* That's the whole purpose of why God has called us into His family, to become *one* with God the Father and Jesus Christ in **a Divine created relationship** for all eternity. Are we not, as the bride of Christ, going to be submissive to Christ forever? By willing choice? Because of love?

Yes!

When you get things stated out—this is my ten acres, this is your ten acres and we’re going to overlap two acres—we have already drawn the battle lines. You’re never going to have peace.

We can’t help all the incompatibilities that have been caused by bad choices and things like that. However, we can begin to get our mind on God and His way, and begin to see this was *a created relationship*. Maybe, if the husbands will really begin loving their wives, and the wives begin—because of their conscience toward God—submit to them, I think that we’ll find far less oppression and far more acceptance. There will be less fights and haggles going on because you understand it is *a created relationship* that God has made. That’s what we need to realize.

Genesis 4:1—What did Eve say? “...‘I have gotten a man from the LORD’”—knowing that child-production was a creation of God.

Let’s expand on this even more. When I give a sermon on husband/wife relationships I’m going to begin with the wedding ceremony that we have, because it is a covenant relationship, and ***a covenant relationship is a created relationship!*** God made us male and female and for that cause shall a man leave his father and mother and cleave to his wife.

Let’s see how we need to have the perspective of a husband/wife relationship. A man shall not have to make his wife submit to him. A woman should not have to make her husband love her. It’s a matter of willingness and choosing to do so. If you’ve got tensions and fighting, then you do have to use carnal means. If it gets to a point that the law has to be laid down because of carnality, then so be it, the law has to be laid down! But what we’re talking about here is the ideal situation that spiritually we are to grow into, because we have the Spirit of God, and because Christ is in us!

Ephesians 5:22: “Wives, submit yourselves to your own husbands, as to the Lord.” Wives have a greater standard as to why you do it.

Verse 23: “For the husband is *the* head of the wife... [by creation] ...even as Christ *is* the Head of the Church... [by creation] ...and He *is* the Savior of the body. For even as the Church is subject to Christ, in the same way also *let* wives be *subject* to their own husbands in everything. Husbands, love your own wives...” (vs 23-25). That’s quite different from having in subjection, forcing by brute force. ***Love your wives!***

Each of you do this: Husbands, why don’t

you see if you can love your wives to inspire your wife to submit to you. Wives, why don’t you submit to your husbands and be kind to see if you can inspire your husband to love you even more. Take the opposite approach rather than the hierarchical approach of forcing. I mean, you can force certain things, you can even put a bridle on a horse and make it do things. But no one wants a horsey marriage.

This is the goal, the ideal! How are you to love your wives? “...in the same way that Christ also loved the Church, and gave Himself for it” (v 25). A sacrificial protecting, working, providing, loving relationship.

Here’s why you’re to provide for your wives; same as Christ for the Church, v 26: “So that He might sanctify it, having cleansed *it* with the washing of the water by *the* Word”

- by inspiration
- by encouragement
- by uplifting

When you have tension and you’re carnal, you can’t do that. It all boils down to frustration and anger.

Verse 27: “That He might present it to Himself *as* the glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it might be Holy and without blame.” That’s how Christ is treating us. So, what we need to do is with Christ in us treat each in the proper created relationship of husband and wife as it needs to be.

Verse 28: “In the same way, husbands are duty-bound to love their wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself; for no man has ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord *does* the Church” (vs 28-29). Notice what we are to do that:

Verse 30: “For we are members of His body—of His flesh and of His bones.” That goes right back to how Eve was created with one of the ribs of Adam, one of his bones. Likewise, we are created from the innermost part of the being of Christ. There’s a great, great deal for us here, because of what God has done.

Verse 31: “For this reason shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined... [cleave to] ...to his wife; and the two shall be one flesh.” When you bring forth children, what are you doing? ***You are creating—recreating yourself—through this one flesh existence! Bringing children into the world who are also going to be children for the Kingdom of God!***

If we would have had that perspective in

husband/wife relationships and in childrearing, don't you think things would have gone a whole lot differently than they did? *I would say so!* But here it is after many years of being married and having children all grown up, now I'm coming to understand it. I guess with gray hair, time and finally learning the Word of God, I begin to understand. God is probably up there saying, 'How long, oh stupid, will you not understand?' We just get all carnal in this.

Verse 32: "This is a great mystery; but I am speaking in respect to Christ and the Church. Nevertheless, let each one of you love his wife even as himself; and *let each* wife see that she reverence *her* husband" (vs 32-33).

Let's see how the family relationship continues in 1-John 1. We know that we are created in Christ Jesus, so the relationship that God has with us between Christ and God the Father is also a created relationship by the calling of God.

Who did it? *God did the calling!* You had to repent, that is true, but God did the calling. He brought you into this relationship, He gave you the Holy Spirit, so therefore, our fellowship is to be:

1-John 1:3: "That which we have seen and have heard we are reporting to you in order that you also may have fellowship with us..."

The relationship that we have with brethren is also *a created relationship*, because it is something that God has done. We're not related physically. Chances are we probably wouldn't even know or meet each other if it were not for being called of God and being in the Church of God. Therefore, that is a *spiritually created relationship*, which means that brotherly love becomes paramount in importance.

"...for the fellowship—indeed, our fellowship—is with the Father and with His own Son Jesus Christ" (v 3). There is that *created relationship!* He's not called the chief and lieutenant in a hierarchy or army. It's called *the Father and the Son!* We are the children of God:

1-John 3:1: "Behold! What *glorious* love the Father has given to us..." John doesn't say *the king*, he says *the Father*, because we are in a *created family relationship* with Him.

"...that we should be called **the children of God!**... [that is a created relationship] ...For this very reason, the world does not know us... [it doesn't understand us] ...because it did not know Him" (v 1). The world doesn't know it.

It's quite amazing, you look out here and all

the people on the golf course, doing their work mowing the lawn, etc., wash the car. They're out there and thinking they're having a good time and probably enjoying themselves. But which is greater: the enjoyment of doing those things? *or* The pleasure of knowing God and having His Spirit?

Let's see how this fellowship is and realize that God created us so we could receive the Holy Spirit. That's why we're made in the image of God. That's why with husband/wife relations, family relations, brotherly relations within the Church *they are all created relationships*, which require a standard of behavior based upon love. If we understand that, then we're going to go a long way in solving a lot of the carnal problems that we've been beset with.

1-Corinthians 3:16: "Don't you understand that **you are God's temple, and that the Spirit of God is dwelling in you?**"—not in a building. Think on that! It's said twice in Heb. 10, 'You have prepared a body for Me,' referring to Christ and the Church. But that also refers to us. "...the Spirit of **God is dwelling in you.**"

Verse 17: If anyone defiles the temple of God, God shall destroy him because the temple of God is Holy, **which temple you are.** That's quite a thing! Maybe this will help us understand a little bit more of what we need to do. These Scriptures that Paul wrote are not to be taken to be used by hierarchical authoritarians to put down women. They are not to be used to give men the authority to destroy their wives, or their wives the authority to disregard the Word of God, 'because Paul wrote these awful things about women and telling them to not speak in church.' We need to get a whole new perspective.

2-Corinthians 1:21: "But He [God the Father] Who establishes us with you in Christ and Who has anointed us, *is* God." God Himself, personally, to have this relationship with you, gave you the Holy Spirit.

Verse 22: "Who has also sealed us and has given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts. But I call upon God to bear witness of my intentions, that in order to spare you I did not yet come to Corinth; not that we exercise lordship over your faith, but because we are working with you *to increase* your joy. For you stand by faith" (vs 22-24). There's not hierarchy there that Paul had.

2-Corinthians 6:14: "Do not be unequally yoked with unbelievers..." You can apply that to:

- business
- marriage
- church doctrines

- not going out in the world and finding out what their ‘religions’ are and bring that in with what we do

Would you not be doctrinally unequally yoked with a Baptist? Presbyterian? Catholic? *No question about it!*

“...For what do righteousness and lawlessness *have* in common? And what fellowship *does* light *have* with darkness? And what union *does* Christ *have* with Belial? Or what part *does* a believer *have* with an unbeliever? And what agreement *is there between* a temple of God and idols? For you are a temple of *the* living God, exactly as God said: ‘I will dwell in them and walk in *them*; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people’” (vs 14-16)—in this ***created relationship and fellowship that God wants and to be born into the Kingdom of God forever!*** Of course, the resurrection is creation!

Verse 17: “‘Therefore, come out from the midst of them and be separate,’ says *the* Lord, ‘and touch not *the* unclean, and I will receive you; and I shall be a Father to you, and you shall be My sons and daughters,’ says *the* Lord Almighty” (vs 17-18).

***These created relationship are very important.*** We need to understand that!

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) 1 Timothy 2:9-15, 12
- 2) 1 Corinthians 14:34-35
- 3) 1 Corinthians 11:1-5, 7-8, 6, 15, 6-16
- 4) Exodus 15:1-3, 18, 20-21
- 5) Judges 4:4-9
- 6) Judges 5:1-3
- 7) 1 Samuel 2:1-11, 20-21
- 8) Galatians 4:27-28
- 9) Luke 1:39-55
- 10) Acts 21:8-12
- 11) 1 Timothy 2:13
- 12) Genesis 1:26-28
- 13) Genesis 2:18-24
- 14) Genesis 4:1
- 15) Ephesians 5:22-33
- 16) 1 John 1:3
- 17) 1 John 3:1
- 18) 1 Corinthians 3:16-17
- 19) 2 Corinthians 1:21-24
- 20) 2 Corinthians 6:14-18

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Revelation 2; 3
- Hebrews 10

#### Also referenced:

- Commentary by Spiros Zodhiates
- Sermon: *Created Relationships* (Feast of Tabernacles, day 6, 1998)

FRC:bo  
Transcribed: 2-23-15

## Pastoral Epistles III Fellowship Groups & Structure

(1-Timothy 3)  
Fred R. Coulter

How do you structure a church or fellowship group without having a hierarchy, but have at least enough organization to get things done?

The first thing you need to understand is that Jesus Christ is the Head of the Church. The Church, in that sense, is not a corporate body. The Church of God, in that sense, is all those in the world who have the Spirit of God. They may belong to various fellowship groups or affiliate with various corporate structures. The problem they had in Worldwide, and in other churches, is that:

1. they didn't understand about the love of God
2. they took the corporate structure and superimposed that upon the New Testament

Remember the book *Against the Gates of Hell* by Stanley Rader? He wrote in there that Herbert W. Armstrong held the office equivalent to the pope. I remember the first thought that came into my mind concerning the hierarchical structure of the Church was when I was in Pasadena in 1972. Of course, we were all anticipating, having their Petra boxes ready to go.

They were having big problems at that time and Herbert Armstrong said, 'Brethren, if there's any one thing that the Catholic Church has right that's government from the top down!' It was in the gymnasium at that time, the auditorium hadn't been built, yet. The wind from that statement came sweeping by like a hurricane. His jaws were moving up front, and yours were moving with the wind.

The thought came into my mind—it wasn't rebellious at all—why would God use Satan's method of government in His Church? Just a fleeting thought, and I never thought on it much after that. But at least that was a seed that, I feel, God planted in my mind.

With the fellowship groups, they start out very unorganized; maybe there's just one couple alone keeping Sabbath services at home. Sometimes it will be that way for a long time before anyone ever comes and joins them.

There is carnal control and leverage to get you to do things by misusing Scriptures. When you leave *the* Church, you're 'falling away.' This

Scripture is used—Heb. 10—to make sure that you stay in church, and to make you come and fellowship; in some cases where you don't want to. Then they put *fear* in you so that you're afraid not to come!

Hebrews 10:25: "Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, even as some *are* accustomed to do; but rather, encouraging *one another*, and all *the* more as you see the day drawing near." They say it says you must attend. If you don't attend you're sinning.

After a while people find out that there is so much sin by the leadership within the Church that they just stay home. They're tired of getting up every Sabbath morning, praying: 'O God, bless me with a good Sabbath; help me to have a good attitude, and let me be able to go to church and hear the sermon.' So, you go to church and you come home discouraged, frustrated and miserable.

After a while God impresses it upon your mind that you stay home, and hopefully by that time, we're able to send you some sermons or others have sent you sermons, and then you begin listening to those. I got a letter from a woman in Santa Rosa that said: 'I've stayed home three years and now I'm ready for fellowship.'

Then a small fellowship group begins, and it gradually grows. As you will find with the fellowship groups, we have a minimum amount of structure, and the structure is only to facilitate the convenience of having the get-together. That's what it needs to be.

The Church is not a place to come and air your problems. Fellowshiping with the brethren is not a place to talk about the problems of other people. We've had enough of that! A fellowship group is when you come together and worship and serve God.

How do you structure a fellowship group when it gets to a point that you need someone to lead it? There has to be leadership, and the leadership has to be motivated by God's Spirit to do the will of God.

There are plenty of people out there who consider themselves leaders. We've had them put themselves forward; that's fine. Some people may disparage me a little bit, but that's okay. When I give

someone and opportunity, I give them say, eight feet of rope. I'm the kind that I do the way the Bible does, which is, in modern parlance, you give a mission statement, which is: *go do this*. 'How do I do it?' *Whatever is in the Bible and whatever is practical, you do it!* There has to be some responsibility!

Some of these fellowship groups become like a zoo! They have all kinds of people coming in, or they have all kinds of sermons from all kinds of different people. What happens is it just divides, splits and conquers, because you don't that a lot of the sermons coming in are really *false prophets, bearing false doctrines!*

Lo and behold, fellowship groups become victims again and again. Especially if you've gone from one church to another church to another church, and you find the same old/same old wherever you go. It's like this: *You can get the person out of Worldwide, but you can't Worldwide out of the person!*

They go to United Church of God: *You can get the person out of United, but you can't United out of the person!* And right on down the line. That's why we call ourselves the nickname: *The No Hassle, Recycled Church of God*. We don't want any hassles, arguments, anything run by carnality. We want it run with the Spirit of God.

- Are we capable of doing that?
- Does not God lay it upon us to be capable of doing that?
- Are there not men who are willing to yield to God and put aside their vanity?
  - ✓ So that they can serve with humility?
  - ✓ So that they can serve where they want to serve?
  - ✓ So that they can help the brethren without the need of seeking recognition?

We've had people put themselves forward. After they are disappointed that we don't just embrace them and say, 'O good, you're fantastic.' *No!* What we do is this: If we have someone who says that they are an elder and want to come with the Christian Biblical Church of God...

Back in Baltimore they asked some questions at an open Bible study. A man said, 'Fred, what would you do if an evangelist came and said that he wanted to work you?' I said that the first thing I would say is, 'Take a backseat until we find out whether you're a minister, indeed.' This is what we do with those who are elders and they want to come and be a part of Christian Biblical Church of God. That's fine, come and fellowship with us.

Let me tell you, there is a lot of re-educating to do—wherever there may be an elder to do that—to get the hierarchy out. Many people like to get the hierarchy out of the other person, but not of themselves. So, we have to get it out of both of us. God has given us the way if we would just pay attention to Acts 20. I imagine by this time the Apostle Paul was wondering what on earth was going to happen to the Church:

- he was seeing the mystery of iniquity working
- he was seeing some of his close companions forsake him and go back into the world
- he was fighting false prophets who were deceitfully handling the Word of God
- he had to say, 'Look, let me be a fool for a few minutes, please' (1-Cor. 11)
- he had to say, 'These are ministers of God?'

In Acts 20 Paul calls all the elders down from Ephesus, and he says:

Acts 20:28: "Take heed, therefore... [watch out] ...to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers..."—not bishops. What is an overseer? *One who oversees the activities of the congregation or fellowship group, to see that it is done in order and the Word of God is taught, and that things are handled in a proper Godly manner!*

In that there is no politics. We've lived through the political system; we've lived through the personality system—I'm *not* a personality. I remember that when I was in college, I got a nickname, which is still with me today. David Jon Hill was one of the funniest men in the work, and he said, 'Fred Coulter, you've got a face that looks like a blanket with two burnt holes in it.' That's my face, but at least I can see! Some of you have blankets with no holes!

Notice that it doesn't say *overlord*. We've seen that in the Church. There was one minister in Seattle that wherever he was sent he found out who was the richest, most accomplished building contractor in the area, and he would have him build him a house, then ordain him as a local elder.

When I was ordained by Herbert W. Armstrong on the last day of Unleavened Bread in 1965, one of the political appointees was ordained with me and he built a house for Mr. McNair. I understand that someone in the Chicago area built a house for someone, too. All of that God does not recognize. Do you understand that? *God does not recognize that kind of thing!*

An overseer is one who truly, truly loves God. The main criteria and personality we used was who was the best speaker. I tell you one thing, unless you speak from the heart, all your speaking is only so much tinkling, as Paul said. That's why any speaking that is done for those of you who do speaking, for those who give sermonettes—please understand this: Do not be as hard on those who give sermonettes because you compare them with me. I speak over 200 times a year. But hopefully, if I can help you with some of the techniques in speaking, the first technique is to *love God and speak from the heart!*

You've heard the saying that when you speak, you speak so loudly that I can't hear what you're saying. I remember the first time I heard Paul under Charles Hunting. We were in college, and during a ministerial conference with all these high mucky-muck evangelists and you hear the best. Charles Hunting got up there and gave the most powerful bombastic yelling sermon! We were all just nailed to our seats with the words!

Where is he today? *That was human might, that was human personality, not by the Spirit of God!* You can look at others and ask: Where are they now? Carl Franklin graduated the same year as me. Carl is not with me because we're friends. Being friends is in addition to loving God. What Carl does is not a political thing for me. I don't ask him to back me up just to back me up, because I'm me. If I'm wrong he feels free to come and tell me. Maybe there's a misunderstanding and I can clear it up. That's the way it needs to be.

An overseer is someone who is overseeing the flock of God. It's very important for you to understand what comes next.

"...has made you overseers to feed the Church of God... [not to let the Church of God feed you, as ministers] ...which He purchased with His own blood" (v 28). That's very important and profound to understand. All of you belong to God, and whoever is an overseer is a steward.

A steward is someone who is responsible for using other people's property for the benefit of the one who owns it. The parable of the talents is a *stewardship relationship*:

Matthew 25:14: "For *the Kingdom of Heaven* is like a man leaving the country, who called his own servants and delivered to them his property. Now, to one he gave five talents, and to another two, and to another one; he *gave* to each one according to his own ability, and immediately left the country. Then the one who had received five talents went and traded with them..." (vs 14-16).

God expects you to use them; the instruction book is here on how to use them. He expects you to constantly grow, being perfected in love.

"...and made an additional five talents. In the same way also, the one who had *received* two *talents* also gained two others. But the one who had received the single *talent* went and dug in the earth, and hid his lord's money" (vs 16-18). God didn't want them to do that.

If you know someone who is currently digging a hole, help them out. Send them another shovel to fill it in and give them some sermons on the love of God and the purpose of their calling, and let them get the talent out of that hole.

Verse 19: "Now, after a long time, the lord of those servants came to take account with them. Then the one who had received five talents came to *him and* brought an additional five talents... [Why? *Because they belong to you!*] ...saying, 'Lord, you delivered five talents to me; see, I have gained five other talents besides them.' And his lord said to him, 'Well *done*, good and faithful servant! *Because* you were faithful over a few things, I will set you over many things....'" (vs 19-23).

What are we being told here? *What we do here in this life is stewardship for God!* That's what it is. And when Christ returns we need to present what belongs to God with the increase. If we don't, then we're going to be like the one who began to complain and accuse God.

Verse 24: "Then the one who had received the single talent also came to *him and* said, 'Lord, I knew that you are a hard man, reaping where you did not sow...'" How do you expect me to go out and gather anything when you don't sow it?

"...and gathering where you did not scatter" (v 24). No faith in God that He would provide, because God would provide. If you have no faith in God, God is a hard Master! If you're against God, He's going to be even harder! God says that He's going to 'cast His bread upon the water, and it won't come back to Him empty.' That's why He wants all of the brethren to grow. We need to be so busy yielding to God and the Spirit of God that:

- we don't have time for politics
- we don't have time for stupidity
- we don't have time for a hierarchy
- we don't have time for idolizing a man

We all have to grow, and let God fill us with His Spirit and lead and guide us in the way we need to go.

Verse 25: “And *because* I was afraid, I went and hid your talent in the earth. *Now* look, you have your own.’ His lord answered *and* said to him, ‘*You* wicked and lazy servant! You knew that I reap where I did not sow, and gather what I did not scatter. Because *you knew* this, you were duty-bound to take my talent to the money exchangers, *so that* when I came, I could have received my own with interest” (vs 25-27). This person here was worse than a Sardisite, the Church that has a name and lives, but is dead. That’s a corpse with a pulse. What happened?

Verse 28: “Therefore, take the talent from him, and give *it* to the one who has ten talents.” If this were a carnal situation, what would happen? *Well, he’s not kin!* Christ is going to say this is not communism.

Verse 29: “For to everyone who has, *more* shall be given, and *he* shall have abundance; on the other hand, *as for* the one who does not have, even that which he has shall be taken from him. And cast the worthless servant into the outer darkness.’ There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth” (vs 29-30).

Remember, every one of the brethren have been purchased with the blood of Christ!

Acts 20:29: “For I know this: that after my departure grievous wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock; and from among your own selves men will rise up speaking perverse things to draw away disciples after themselves. Watch, therefore, remembering that *for* three years **I ceased not to admonish each one night and day with tears**” (vs 29-31). Think on that verse! That’s a lot of warning to the very men he was talking to.

Verse 32: “And now I commit you, brethren, to God and to the Word of His grace, which is able to build you up and to give you an inheritance among all those who are sanctified. I have coveted no one’s silver or gold or clothing. Rather, you yourselves know that these hands did minister to my needs and to those who were with me. *In* all things, I have showed you that you are obligated to so labor to support those who are weak, remembering the words that the Lord Jesus Himself said: “It is more blessed to give than to receive.” And after saying these things, he knelt with them all *and* prayed. Then there was much weeping by everyone; and they embraced Paul *and* fervently kissed him, being distressed most of all by his saying that they would not see his face any more. Then they accompanied him to the ship” (vs 32-38).

I hope that God has that recorded somewhere on some sort of spiritual television. One night when we’re in the Kingdom of God, God can

turn on the spiritual television, hit the remote control; wouldn’t that be something? Sometimes you can get more out of the Bible if you try to put yourself in it and think if you’re one of those kneeling down in front of Paul and listening to the words that he said. They’re really something!

Paul wrote these things when he was in prison. He knew that he was not going to come back. Timothy was a faithful young elder. Let’s see what Paul wrote to Timothy concerning overseers, then we will see how the Bible says that it should be done:

### An Overseer:

1-Timothy 3:1: “Faithful *is* the saying, ‘If any man aspires to *be* an overseer, he desires a good work.’” There are some elders who many not be an overseer, but all overseers are elders.

Verse 2: “Now then, it is obligatory *that* the overseer be blameless, *the* husband of one wife, vigilant, serious-minded, respectable, hospitable, skillful in teaching; not given to much wine, not a bully, not greedy for selfish gain; but kind, not a quarreler, not a lover of money; one who rules his own house well, having *his* children in subjection with all respect” (vs 2-4). This is showing that the one who is ordained as an elder can have a young family.

I had someone send me a paper that said that all elders have to be old, old men. Maybe, in some cases, they can be. I said to him, ‘What are you going to do about this: “...having *his* children in subjection with all respect.” If you’re up in your 50s or 60s all your children are grown and gone.’ He didn’t know what to say. Then I said, ‘What about Samuel? Christ? The apostles? Timothy? I sent his paper back and he didn’t like it and hasn’t written again. I said, ‘If you’re going to do research, be honest! Use all the Scriptures!’

So, if you get something that someone has written, read it and see if it’s thorough. Does it cover all, and if it doesn’t then send it back and let him do it.

Verse 5: “(For if a man does not know *how* to rule his own household, how will he take care of *the* Church of God?) Not a novice, lest he become conceited *and* fall into *the same* condemnation as the devil. It is mandatory that he also have a good report from those *who are* outside *the Church*, lest he fall into reproach and *the* snare of the devil” (vs 5-7). Here are two warnings that are given.

Verse 8: “In the same way also, the deacons who serve *must* be serious-minded, not hypocritical,

not given to much wine, not greedy for selfish gain; holding the mystery of the faith with a pure conscience. And let those *who meet the qualifications...* [that's understood in the Greek] ...also be proved first..." (vs 8-10).

This is what we do. Let them be proved. Sometimes there will be those that their vanity will hang out and people will think: Who is Fred Coulter to let this person do that? I had some complaints at one of the Feasts of Tabernacles, because I wasn't able to go. Well, that's fine; I gave him eight feet of rope and he got himself all tied up in his own vanity. That's too bad! I'm sorry that that happened. It's was an opportunity to be prudent.

Don't come and say that it was Fred Coulter putting people to do this and that, because I'm not. Give them a little room to do something, let them be proved, then we will see the sincerity of the individual. If they're not sincere, then we can say, 'Thank you for helping, we're sorry, but we don't need you anymore.' That's the way it needs to be, otherwise we will end up with the same thing that we left.

I do believe that one of the lessons that God is teaching us, that if we come back and do the same thing that we left, we return to bondage.

"...then let them *be appointed to serve, if they are found to be* blameless. In the same way also, *their wives must* be serious-minded, not slanderers, sober *and* faithful in all things" (vs 10-11). There are things that happens in a hierarchical church:

- you have a *spy system*
- you have a *network*
- you have *political deacons and elders*

What do they do? *They report to the chief mucky-muck!*

What happens then is that those who are spies are rewarded for bringing the information, and the whole church is torn apart and divided up. That's not the way to do it. God does not want women or men going around talking about people and relating private business to other people.

Let me just say this: If, as a Christian—man or woman—you cannot hold a confidence of something that was given to you—private confidence—*then you are sinning against that person and Christ!* That's why at a Feast of Tabernacles I gave the series on *Judge Righteous Judgment*.

Verse 12: "Let the deacons be husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own households well. For those who have served well

acquire for themselves a good standing and much confidence in *the* faith that *is* in Christ Jesus. These things I am writing to you, hoping to come to you shortly; but if I should delay, *you have these things in writing, so that you may know how one is obligated to conduct oneself in the house of God,* which is *the Church of the living God, the pillar and foundation of the Truth.* And undeniably, **great is the mystery of Godliness...**" (vs 12-16).

This last verse is the foundation for everything that went on before. Paul always ends up by keeping the overall perspective of why we're here in mind. Then there are many things in 1-Tim. 4, which we will get to in this series.

There are many things we can look at; this is something that needs to be done. 2-Timothy 2:1: "Therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that *is* in Christ Jesus." Paul makes it clear that those who are in the ministry—as an elder or overseer—have a special gift of grace that God gives them at that time. Paul says that it is 'grace given to me to preach.' It is *a gift of God!* It does not come before ordination. It's just that simple! Of course, Timothy was ordained of Paul.

Verse 2: "And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, these *things* commit to faithful men, such as will be competent to teach others also."

When we were in Biblical Church of God, we thought that the command to have elders in every city superseded everything else. I have to tell you that we violated the Scripture that says, 'do not lay hands on any man's son.' We made elders where there should not have been elders. That's why in the Christian Biblical Church of God we did not have ordinations until recently. This time we want to do it as close to the Bible as we can.

Let me just say that the time is now—and what I'm trying to do with the things that I teach and Carl teaches—that we are teaching everyone, but within that there needs to be those who are being taught God's way so that they can be overseers and elders in the future. Since we didn't have any for the first 14 years, I've been criticized, especially by one man who wanted to be an elder. It can cause a great deal of grief.

I don't know if those of you sitting here will be selected of God by your groups—the congregation or fellowship group that you belong to—who sees and understands that God is calling you to be a minister, *which is a servant.* But let me encourage you to educate yourselves, and to help you educate yourself, we have 'a million' sermons.

Someone called one time and said, 'Send me everything you have.' I said, 'You really don't want that!' We'll send you a 'Care Package.' Carl mentioned that the 'Care Packages' are good from this point of view: Everyone who comes to Christian Biblical Church of God starts out with the same footing. You know where we come from, you know where we're going. That's important to understand.

Verse 14: "See that *they* remain mindful of these things, earnestly charging *them* in the sight of the Lord **not to argue over words that are not profitable in any way...**" We've seen that with the Passover and so many things: arguing over words. Then a person takes a position that is really political and selfish and they run around with some false doctrine.

I knew that the *Friends of the Sabbath* thing was going to be a disaster. I knew that *The Journal* was going to be a disaster. Before it became *The Journal* someone called me and said, 'Would you write something for *In Transition*?' I said, 'At the present time I won't, because the one who is in charge of it is the same political self he has always been. But I will write for you on one condition: you're in Big Sandy and there's currently an evangelist that many have accused of assaulting Sue Ray Robinson. If you want to show that you're impartial, you go down and do an interview with Sue Ray Robinson and you put it in your *In Transition*, because you've already done one with the violator of her to give *his* story. If you do that, then I will put something in *In Transition*. If you do not, you're not honest.' ***They never did it!***

We still have some of these same things going on. If you're shocked at what Anthony Buzzard and Charles Hunting are writing in *The Journal* over the 'oneness of God' I've got a whole sermon series on *Who Was Jesus?* Anthony Buzzard and Charles Hunting made sure that they got in contact with every split-off group and their literature. So, we just went through the Bible and showed they're wrong.

Also note sermons:

- *Two Jehovahs of the Pentateuch*
- *Two Jehovahs of the Psalms*

Debunking the sacred-namers. I tell you what, we have an armament of literature that is going to be absolutely profound!

(go to the next track)

We're going to see in Titus that we do have to stand up for the Truth!

"...charging *them* in the sight of the Lord not to argue over words that are not profitable in any

way *but which lead to the subverting of those who hear*" (v 14).

- Have you seen some of your friends subverted by listening to false doctrines?
- Have not been fairly taught by the ministry so they are well grounded and know Truth from error?
- Are sucked away in a vortex of stupidity and lies?

Verse 15: "Diligently *study* to show yourself approved unto God..." Paul is telling Timothy to 'apply yourself.' There's one thing I know, brethren, I am never satisfied with what I have at the present day. The reason is because once you become satisfied, then you stop growing. God has designed the Bible in such a way that it is a whole lifetime project of study. That's important to realize. Paul is telling us, "...show yourself approved unto God..." Fruits will show in time.

"...a workman who does not *need to be* ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of the Truth; but avoid profane and vain babblings because they will *only* give rise to more ungodliness, and their words will eat away at the body like gangrene; of whom are Hymeneus and Philetus, who have gone astray from the Truth, claiming that the resurrection has already taken place, and are destroying the faith of some. Nevertheless, the foundation of God stands firm, having this seal: 'The Lord knows those who are His,' and, 'Let everyone who calls upon the name of Christ depart from unrighteousness'" (vs 15-19).

For anyone who is going to teach, you never want to teach *your own ideas*. ***You want to teach the Word of God!*** Is there anything greater than the Word of God? *No!* That's what needs to be taught. That's why when you hear people combine psychology and the Word of God you know they're going to stray from what he was commanded.

2-Timothy 4:1: "I charge you, therefore..." To all those who would teach. If you have a notion that you want to teach, listen carefully:

"...in the sight of God, even the Lord Jesus Christ, Who is ready to judge *the* living and *the* dead at His appearing and His kingdom: **Preach the Word!...**" (vs 1-2). You're not supposed to preach something else. Even Christ didn't preach of Himself; if He didn't how much less us?

"...Be urgent in season and out of season; convict, rebuke, encourage, with all patience and doctrine. For there shall come a time when they will not tolerate sound doctrine; but according to their own lusts they shall accumulate to themselves a *great number of* teachers, having ears itching to hear

*what satisfies their cravings*; and they shall turn away their own ears from the Truth; and they shall be turned aside unto myths” (vs 2-4). They’re deceived, and we’ve seen that.

If you believe in Christmas, you believe in a fable. If you believe in Easter, you believe in a fable. Go to the pet store and say, ‘I want to buy a bunny rabbit, but I want to make sure that it lays boiled chicken eggs.’

Titus 1: “Paul, a servant of God... [Paul always identifies himself first] ...and an apostle of Jesus Christ, according to *the* faith of God’s elect and *the* knowledge of *the* Truth that is according to Godliness; in *the* hope of eternal life, which God Who cannot lie promised before the ages of time, but revealed in its own set time in *the* proclamation of His Word, with which **I was entrusted according to the commandment of God our Savior**” (vs 1-3). Think about that! You think about what Paul had to do because he *knew* that he was writing the Scriptures for God. **He knew it!** That’s something!

Verse 4: “To Titus, a **true son** according to **our common faith...**” Notice the relationship; Timothy was his ‘beloved son in faith’; here Titus is “...a true son...” What kind of relationship did they have? A *personal created relationship* because God was the One Who called them all. It is a *family relationship*, not a hierarchical relationship. There it is in the Bible very clear for us to see.

Verse 5: “For this cause I left you in Crete, so that you might set in order the things that needed to be done, and might ordain elders in every city, as I commanded you.” So, they already had it laid out what he was to do.

Again, here are qualification, v 6: “If any man be blameless, *the* husband of one wife, having faithful children, not accused of debauchery or rebellion. For it is obligatory that **as God’s steward** an overseer be blameless, not self-willed...” (vs 6-7). What kind of will? *God’s will!* That doesn’t mean that some people might not resist from time to time, but you still have to get across the will of God.

“...not quick-tempered, not given to wine, not a bully, not greedy for material gain; but hospitable, a lover of good, sound-minded, just, Holy, self-controlled, holding steadfastly to the faithful Word, according to the teachings of *Jesus Christ*, **so that he may be able both to encourage with sound doctrine and to convict those who are gainsayers**. For there are many rebellious and vain talkers and deceivers, especially those from *the circumcision party*, whose mouths must be stopped...” (vs 7-11).

That’s why when someone insults the Word of God, we’re under obligation to answer back and set the record straight.

Verse 11: “Whose mouths must be stopped; who are subverting whole households, teaching things which *they* ought not, for the sake of selfish gain.”

### **Selecting Elders:**

Let’s see how they selected those who became elders. This is what we endeavor to do, and let’s understand that ordination does require the laying on of hands. Some people claim that word means to vote; we’ll see that has nothing to do with it when we get there.

Acts 6:1: “Now, in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a complaint by the Greeks against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministrations. And after calling the multitude of disciples to *them*, the twelve said, ‘It is not proper for us to leave the Word of God in order to wait on tables. Therefore, brethren, search out from among yourselves seven men of good repute, full of *the* Holy Spirit and wisdom, whom we may appoint over this business; but we will give ourselves continually to prayer and the ministry of the Word.’ And this declaration was pleasing to all the multitude; and **they chose...**” (vs 1-5).

It doesn’t say how they chose, but at least they all agreed, and it was the majority. I’m sure there were some who didn’t agree; you’ll always have someone who doesn’t agree.

“...they chose Stephen, a man full of faith and *the* Holy Spirit; and Philip; and Prochorus; and Nicanor; and Timon; and Parmenas; and Nicolas, *who was* a proselyte of Antioch. *And they set them before the apostles; and after praying, they laid their hands on them*” (vs 5-6)—the doctrine of *laying on of hands*.

Some people say that you don’t need to lay hands for ordinations. What on earth is this? *This is the setting aside and the laying on of hands!* That’s the first example that we have.

Let’s see how the Apostle Paul was chosen; these are special circumstances. You know for sure that those of the circumcision party in Jerusalem would not come down and anoint Paul.

Sidebar: Do you know why the book of Hebrews does not say who wrote it? Even though it has the signs of Paul and Luke? *If anything came to Jerusalem*—which the book of Hebrews was written to the brethren in Jerusalem—if *it had Paul’s name on it, it would have been burned!* That’s why! It was

definitely Paul and Luke. In translating it, I can see that Paul was dictating it to Luke.

Here are special circumstances, Acts 13:1: “Now, there were certain **prophets and teachers** in the Church that was at Antioch...”—meaning they could foretell events or foretell the Word of God under inspiration; that’s what a prophet in the New Testament is—both.

“...including Barnabas, and Simeon who was called Niger, and Lucius the Cyrenian, and Manaen (who had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch), and Saul. And as they were ministering and fasting to the Lord, the Holy Spirit said, ‘Separate both Barnabas and Saul to Me for the work to which I have called them.’ And when they had **fasted and prayed, they laid hands on them and sent them out**” (vs 1-3). Can anything be more clear than this verse here.

This is a quick summary of the things that were done. The Greek word that is used here means *lifting up your hands*. It is also one that is used for voting, but this is not voting, because the ones who did it were Paul and Barnabas. Did they raise their hands and vote? *No, it hasn’t anything to do with that!*

As we saw, the congregation was asked for their input (Acts 6). So, now we have a different situation and this is the summary:

Acts 14:21: “And after preaching the Gospel to that city, and making many disciples, they returned to Lystra and Iconium and Antioch.” This is a summary of many weeks, maybe even months in one verse. They had many activities, a lot of teaching.

Verse 22: “Where they established the souls of the disciples, exhorting *them* to continue in the faith, and *declaring* that we must through much tribulation enter into the Kingdom of God.” This was very vivid to them because Paul was stoned just a few months earlier.

Verse 23: “And when they... [Paul and Barnabas] ...had **chosen**... [appointed] ...**for themselves elders** in every church, *and* had prayed with fasting...” Obviously, this is also saying for any that they laid hands on them. You’re not going to have a vote between Paul and Barnabas as to who it’s going to be; what if it’s one to one? That’s the only place.

So, what you do when you have a difficult Scripture such as this, you *use the clear Scriptures* to give you the clear instruction as to what needs to be, as with fasting, praying and laying on of hands.

Let’s see the purpose of all of this; there is a

reason, and it’s not a political reward, it is not just to give a necessarily long service, but here is the whole reason for it. Most everyone begins with Eph. 4:11, but they don’t go too much further. The whole reason is stated later.

Ephesians 4:11: “And He gave some as apostles, and some **prophets**...”—inspired speaking, or inspired foretelling of an event that’s going to happen. I’ll tell you one thing that is true: *if you know the Word of God and you know how God works, you can say whether something is going to work or not!*

Someone got really mad at me when United Church of God first started. One week after it started I was down in Cantonment, Florida, visiting the brethren down there, and someone asked me what I thought about United. I said, ‘It’s going to fail.’ *It just started! Look at all the people they’ve got; and all the money they’ve got!* I said, ‘It’s going to fail.’ *Why?* ‘Because re-organization is not repentance. If there’s not repentance, I know from experience, it will fail.’

I don’t have to be a prophet, or claim to be a prophet, but if I know the Word of God, I know what’s going to happen. Is it failing? *Yes!* Has there been repentance? *No!* So, there are some who prophesy.

“...and some **evangelists**...” (v 11). Let’s understand that all of these are functions. All of the ministers are elders; those who are evangelizing are evangelists while they are evangelizing. If they are no longer evangelizing, then are they evangelists? *No, because they are not fulfilling that function!* Are they still elders? *Yes, because they were ordained as elders and overseers!*

In the churches we were associated with, it was some sort of great level of achievement to attain. Now we learn that the scale was down, not up!

“...and some, pastors... [shepherds; shepherd the sheep of God] ...and teachers” (v 11). There are varying degrees of teaching. I teach and I refer to myself as a minister, but I like to be thought more of as a teacher who teaches the Word of God. If the time comes that I have to evangelize, I will, but is that any great exaltation? *No!* I might be run out of town on a rail.

- For what purpose?
  - What is the function of all of this?
- You structure to the function.*
- What is the function?

Verse 12: “For the perfecting of the saints,

for *the* work of *the* ministry... [helping the brethren] ...for *the* edifying... [up-building] ...of the body of Christ; until we all come into the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man... [spiritually mature person] ...unto *the* measure of *the* stature of the fullness of Christ” (vs 12-13). Is that a tall order? Is that a tall purpose?

That’s why I’ve said, what I want to do is teach you the love of God so that you may attain to fullness of the stature of Christ. That’s very important.

Verse 14: “So that we no longer be children, tossed and carried about with every wind of doctrine by the sleight of men in *cunning* craftiness, with a view to the systematizing of the error; but holding the Truth in love, may in all things grow up into Him Who is the Head, *even* Christ from Whom all the body...” (vs 14-16).

It is such a close, spiritual personal relationship with God the Father and Jesus Christ, that it is likened unto a single body. You can’t get any closer than that. There’s a great lesson with the Church between marriage—husband/wife—and the Church. They are to become one flesh because it is a *created* relationship. The wife is to submit herself to her husband *as unto the Lord*. And the husband is to love his wife *as Christ loves the Church*. Your whole standard is entirely different than a hierarchy. We’ve even had some evangelists brag that they ‘spanked’ their wives. What a shame! *What a shame!*

“...in all things grow up into Him Who is the Head, *even* Christ from Whom all the body fitly framed and compacted together by *that which* every joint supplies, according to *its* inner working in *the* measure of each individual part, is making the increase of the body unto *the* edifying of itself in love” (vs 15-16). That’s what the Church is to be. That’s why there are to be elders and overseers.

They are first to be proved, tried and tested, then we can see if they have the fruits or not. Then we have the congregation put the input of it:

- so that we understand if the person is qualified
- so that we understand if the person is loyal and faithful to Christ

Let’s see the whole motivation again, coming right back to square one:

John 21:15: “Therefore, when they had finished eating, Jesus said to Simon Peter, ‘Simon, *son* of Jonas, do you love Me more than these?’ *And* he said to Him, ‘Yes, Lord. You know that I love You.’....”

There’s a play on words between ‘agape’—which Christ used twice, and ‘philo’—which is *friendship* love. Peter responded to Christ asking, ‘Do you *agape* Me?—which is Divine love. Peter responded with ‘philo’ love: “...‘Yes, Lord, You know that I love You.’....”

“...He [Jesus] said to him, ‘Feed My lambs’” (v 15)—who are purchased with His blood. He said to him again a second time... Why go through this three times? *Because Peter denied Him three times!* Here’s a reaffirmation: Are you really going to love Me? Did Peter love Jesus when he denied Him? *No, he did not!* So, Christ wanted to make sure that Peter got the point.

We want to make sure that those who are going to be elders and teachers with us *get the point!*

- Do you love God first, with all your heart, mind, soul and being?
- Do you love the brethren as the flock of God, to feed and serve them?

Then you can have love and loyalty stronger than a hierarchical command and control. Why? *Because it’s based on love, and there’s nothing greater to build things on than the love of God!* Is that not true? Is there anything greater? *Anything less than that is a substitute!*

Just like with me. I want you to love me because I love you, and I love Christ. I want you to love me because you love Christ and God the Father, too. Out of that comes:

- true love
- true loyalty
- true faithfulness
- true camaraderie
- true brotherhood

That’s how God wants the Church! I tell you, that’s how it’s going to be in the Kingdom of God. Do you suppose that it’s going to be any other way? *NO!* So, Jesus asked Peter the second time:

“...‘Simon, *son* of Jonas, do you love Me?’.... [I imagine that He was looking Peter right in the eye] ...*And* he said to Him, ‘Yes, Lord. You know that I love [‘philo’] You.’ He said to him, ‘Shepherd My sheep.’ He said to him the third time, ‘Simon, *son* of Jonas, do you love Me?’....” (vs 15-16). Jesus came down to Peter’s level and said, ‘Do you love Me as a friend?’

“...Peter was grieved... [his carnality was coming out here] ...because He said to him the third time, ‘Do you love Me?’ *And* he said to Him, ‘Lord, You know all things. You know that I love You.’

Jesus said to him, ‘**Feed My sheep**’” (vs 16-17). That’s the whole point!

Why do we have elders ordained in the Christian Biblical Church of God? *This is the basis and foundation in which it is done!*

We are going to have an ordination here in a few minutes. Some of the congregation contacted me and said, ‘What do we do to have this man ordained?’ I said that you have to first of all have a meeting with everyone without the principal that you want to ordain and discuss it among yourselves. Ask yourselves if he has the fruits to be an elder for the local congregation? Then you pray and fast about it and many of them wrote me, and I had not one dissent. Later there was one dissent, which was after the fact.

A consensus is that the majority agreed. The one who dissented, let me beg you, please, let the Spirit of God help you give the benefit of the doubt so that we do not have any haggling and fighting and hassling over this.

I know that some will accuse me that I said thus and such. No! I’m straight on in what I’ve said. You can’t have total unanimous agreement. If I said ‘unanimous’ agreement, I meant *unanimity* which means *a consensus of the greatest majority*. So, we did have that.

We are going to have an ordination, and we are very happy to do this. I discussed it with the congregation, which is the oldest congregation with us. Carl and I went over the letters and the recommendations and covered the whole thing, and they agreed. I can’t be everywhere all the time in all places, and I can’t do all things.

I can only do what God wants me to do. But I have to follow the instructions that you set overseers for those who will be faithful in serving God and the brethren. They may not be dynamic speakers. They don’t have to be dynamic speakers, just able to teach the Word of God. If they can do it from the heart, that’s greater than some carnal lambaste of some person just up rewarding himself.

So, I’m very thankful that we have the opportunity to do so, at this point the ordination ceremony. That is a very moving occasion and I don’t think it’s proper or fitting to record prayers like this, which are for this one time special occasion. ‘

Let me just mention something else. All ordinations are public and need to be. I’m very happy to do it, and I look forward to those who are willing to yield themselves to God—love God and love the brethren—because I don’t know if I’m

going to live to see Christ return or not. That would be nice, on the one hand; but on the other hand, all the suffering and terrible things that are going to take place, it’s going to be horrendous, indeed!

So, it’s like in the book of Zephaniah, ‘What is the Day of the Lord to you?’ *It’s a day of darkness, cloudiness, death, doom and destruction—* which it’s going to be!

We need to warn the world, but we also need to make sure that the Church of God is solid in the love of God before new people can be brought in. That’s why the major work now needs to be to strengthen the brethren, not reach out and bring new people into chaos! Can you imagine bringing them into chaos? That the first time they come to church they hear, ‘If you want to keep the Sabbath you come at this time in the this building. If you want to keep Sunday, you go over to this building. If you want to have the Feast of Unleavened Bread and eat leaven, then you go over here to his table. If you want to have unleavened bread, you come over here. If you want to wash feet, then you go over here and take a towel and water. If you don’t want to wash feet, then you go over here.

That was the state of the Worldwide Church of God in the 1990s! That’s why we need to have the faithfulness, the unity from the love of God to accomplish this. As it was brought up in the congregation bringing this ordination: What about the future? What if this man goes out on his own?

*I said that you cannot control the future today!* But if he’s faithful today and tomorrow, the chances of him running off and doing his own thing are very remote. But even Paul said that there would ‘rise up among you’ who would do that. I think we can keep it down to a very low minimum if we follow what God wants us to do. We’re all under Jesus Christ. That’s what’s important!

I hope there will be many more ordinations, brethren. That we have *love, unity and loyalty*, because we all love and serve Christ, and we don’t have to demand it because we need command and control. That’s why that what we are doing is difficult. Anytime that you base it upon love, then you’ve got to get rid of self. Once you attain that, then it’s something that is going to last into eternity.

***That’s what God wants!***

Scriptural References:

- 1) Hebrews 10:25
- 2) Acts 20:28
- 3) Matthew 25:14-30
- 4) Acts 20:29-38
- 5) 1 Timothy 3:1-16
- 6) 2 Timothy 2:1-2, 14-19
- 7) 2 Timothy 4:1-4
- 8) Titus 1:1-11
- 9) Acts 6:1-6
- 10) Acts 13:1-3
- 11) Acts 14:21-23
- 12) Ephesians 4:11-16
- 13) John 21:15-17

Scripture referenced, not quoted: 1-Corinthians 11

Also referenced:

Sermon Series:

- *Judge Righteous Judgment*
- *Who Was Jesus*

Sermons:

- *Two Jehovahs of the Pentateuch*
- *Two Jehovahs of the Psalms*

FRC:bo  
Transcribed: 2-23-15

## Pastoral Epistles IV

# Qualifications & Requirements of an Overseer

(1-Timothy 3-4)  
Fred R. Coulter

We're going to go back and do a little bit more in-depth study in 1-Tim. 3:

1-Timothy 3:1: "Faithful *is* the saying, 'If any man aspires to *be* an overseer, he desires a good work.'" There are some of those who have striven after, as we see with Simon Magus, who lusted after and wanted to buy an apostleship. There are also those who want to be overseers, elders and so forth in the Church.

We've had an experience, which I need to relate, that is important for us to understand: A man helped us with hosting a Feast site, but after the Feast I talked to him and he was telling me how that, lo and behold, some years ago that he had a minister—while he was in Worldwide—anoint him for being sick, and then he also mentioned in his prayer for God to use him in his service, too.

Nothing was thought of that, and then 12 years later, because he wanted to be an elder so bad and wanted to have his leadership recognized so much, he decided that that was an ordination. He decided to put himself forward to anoint people, and as one being a minister. He called me and talked to me about it. I said I would listen to the whole thing he had to say and didn't make any comments, and I said, 'I'm going to think on it.'

I just happened to know personally the minister whom he said had this closet ordination for him, so I got hold of his number and called him and asked him if he'd ever do this. He said, 'Of course not! Never! No such thing!' I gave him the number of the man in question and asked him to please call him and let him know. So, he did. After he talked to him, he called me back and told me about their discussion and so forth. What happened was that I was waiting for two and half months for the man to call me back. I thought I would leave the burden upon him.

He got caught in his own imagination. What happened was that he didn't call me back, but he did withdraw all fellowship from us. That's how you can handle some of these problems.

When it says here that "...If any man aspires to *be* an overseer, he desires a good work'"—we're going to see that this is all based upon the spiritual fruits and qualification. It's not based upon what we would call in the world 'leadership' necessarily. It's not based upon

'personality' necessarily. It's not necessarily based upon great speaking. Paul even said, 'You say my speech is rude'—kind of rude and bumbling. That's not the criteria.

I think that things started out with different things like Spokesman's Club and leadership classes with a good footing. But later on it became all carnal and political, all based upon carnal physical characteristics. What we're going to see when we read these, we're going to see all of these are *Scriptural spiritual qualifications of character*. Let's read them and then we'll go back over them:

Verse 2: "Now then, it is obligatory... [that's the force of the Greek] ...*that* the overseer be blameless... [not one all puffed up in pride and vanity] ...*the* husband of one wife, vigilant, serious-minded, respectable, hospitable, skillful in teaching; not given to much wine, not a bully, not greedy for selfish gain; but kind, not a quarreler, not a lover of money; one who rules his own house well, having *his* children in subjection with all respect; (For if a man does not know *how* to rule his own household, how will he take care of *the* Church of God?)" (vs 2-5).

Now let's amplify this a little bit. First of all, all if these take their root in the Old Testament.

### Judgment:

Exo. 18 is a place where most of the hierarchicalists go to establish a hierarchy. Let's understand what this is really talking about. This is Moses' father-in-law talking to Moses.

Exodus 18:19: "Hearken now to my voice. I will give you counsel, and God will be with you. You be for the people toward God that you may bring the causes to God. And you shall teach them ordinances and laws, and shall make them know the way in which they must walk, and the work that they must do. And you shall choose out of all the people able men, **such as fear God, men of truth, hating covetousness**. And place them over the people to be leaders of thousands, and leaders of hundreds, leaders of fifties, and leaders of tens. And let them judge *for* the people at all times...." (vs 19-22).

Their rulership was *based upon judgment*. Their rulership was not command and control. If they were getting out of control in that close camping group that they had while they were on the

exodus, obviously, they would have to handle that.

Verse 21: "...such as fear God, men of truth, hating covetousness...." That's very similar to what we have in 1-Tim. 3 much more expanded.

Let's look at the instructions for the judges. This is also pointed on in the sermon series *Judge Righteous Judgment*, that this is something that is to be for elders, teachers and overseers.

2-Chronicles 19:5: "And he set judges in the land, in all the fortified cities of Judah, city-by-city. And he said to the judges, **Take heed what you do**, for you do not judge for man, but for the LORD who is with you when you render judgment" (vs 5-6). Why is that? *Because they judge according to the laws and commandments of God!*

Also, they have here the commandment to "...Take heed what you do..." In other words, there's a restriction on their life and behavior. They weren't to be judges just for what they thought, but they were to judge according to the laws and commandments of God.

Verse 7: "And now, therefore, let the fear of the LORD be upon you. Be careful and act wisely, for *there is* no iniquity with the LORD our God, nor respect of persons, nor taking of a bribe." We find the same thing in 'greedy of gain' and so forth.

### Service:

Now then, let's understand that to be an overseer or an elder is *a work of service* for the people of God. It is not a badge of honor for carnal notoriety. Notice how many times it says to *take heed to yourself*. We just read it in 2-Chron. 19.

Paul is talking to the elders, Acts 20:28: "**Take heed**, therefore, to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers..."

As we have said, overseers are to be on the sideline overseeing the activities of the congregation. They are to make sure that everything runs smoothly, everything necessary to have the church meetings and things like that run smoothly. If there is to be teaching, then they are to teach according to the Word of God. That's another whole topic, but if they don't teach the Scriptures—basically speaking—you're going to have false doctrine enter in very easily.

Of course, one of the reasons I'm going over this in detail is because it has been the elders and ministers who caused the greatest number of problems that we're still going through in the Church today. It's still happening that there are people who are appointing themselves as teachers;

people going around who don't know what they're talking about and proclaiming themselves as teachers of the Word of God.

"...to feed the Church of God..." (v 28). That is *the work of the service* that is to be done. To feed the Church the *spiritual* food of the Word of God:

- of knowledge
- of understanding
- of wisdom
- to help them to be able to lead and guide their lives according to the Word of God
- to show them what is true and right
- to inspire them to a personal relationship with God the Father and Jesus Christ

All of that is implied there!

As we saw the last time we went through 1-Tim. 3, part 3 of this series, I showed that Jesus asked Peter three times: 'Do you love Me?' and Peter was told, 'Feed My sheep! Feed My lambs!' So, it all has to be based on the love of God, which he has purchased with His own blood.

In other words, it is the Church that belongs to Christ. Those who are baptized members belong to Christ, being the Church, and He is the Head. No minister is the head. He may lead in a visible sense that people can see, but he has to always point to Christ because Christ is the Head. **No man is the head!**

That's why the whole doctrine of the Catholic Church is totally wrong. The Catholic Church has it that you receive salvation through obedience to the church and the ministry, because the pope is the vicar of Christ, and if you don't obey them, you have no salvation. **You can't find that anywhere in the Bible! Nowhere is it there!**

"...which He purchased with His own blood.... [we all belong to Christ] ...For I know this: that after my departure grievous wolves **will come in among you**... [this also has the connotation of *overbearing* wolves] ...not sparing the flock" (vs 28-29). We've lived through that, over and over again!

Verse 30: "And **from among your own selves** men will rise up speaking perverse things to draw away disciples after themselves." And we've seen that; so right here we have a warning that there are going to be grievous wolves coming in, and as Peter said, they will come in *stealthily* (2-Pet. 2). They will infiltrate! And that's the whole plan of the ecumenical movement when you really come to understand it. That's why it's wonderful that we're meeting in small groups and homes.

As I've mentioned before, the way that we function is that we're the Church that is, is not and, yet, is. It's hard to find us. That's okay, as long as we're under the protection of Christ.

"...from among your own selves..."—so, there would be a transformation of men who are already overseers one way or the other. Why? *Because they didn't take heed unto themselves, and things and problems later developed!*

Hebrews 13:7: "Remember your leaders who have spoken the Word of God to you..." The *KJV* says, 'who have rule over you. That's not an accurate translation. They are to lead with the Word of God.

"...considering the outcome of *their* conduct; and imitate *their* faith" (v 7). We're going to see that Paul told Timothy to be an example to the flock. That's how the leadership should be:

- with the Spirit of God
- with the love of God
- with the knowledge of the Word of God
- pointing to Christ always, knowing that everyone belongs to Christ

Then you can follow their faith "...considering the outcome of *their* conduct..."

Verse 12: "For this reason, Jesus, in order that He might sanctify the people by His own blood, also suffered outside the gate." There again, we are sanctified with the blood of Christ.

- not with a hierarchy
- not with authority
- not with rule
- not with command and control

***But with the blood of Christ and the Holy Spirit!***

Verse 13: "So then, let us go forward to Him outside the camp, bearing His reproach." Again, constantly going to Christ.

Verse 17: "Follow your leaders..." There has to be obedience in those things' obviously, not to counter the commands of God. *No man* has the authority to change the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday. *No man* has the authority to do away with any of the laws of God.

{note study paper: "*Binding*" and "*Loosing*" in the *New Testament* (cbcg.org); also showing Peter was not the chief apostle}.

"...and be submissive, because they are looking out for your spiritual well-being, as *those who must be* ready to give an account to God..." (v 17). In other words, all of those of you who are

elders, ministers or overseers are having to give an account, for what you do in teaching the people of God (to Christ). He's going to hold that person accountable.

"...in order that they may do this with joy, and not *with* groaning... [we've also lived through that, where there's been grievousness in the situation] ...because that *would be* unprofitable for you" (v 17).

Let's see who is the Overseer of your souls, 1-Peter 2:25: "For you were as sheep going astray, but you have now returned to the Shepherd and Guardian [Overseer] of your souls." It's interesting how that is phrased: Christ is the *true* Overseer!

- Christ is overseeing the whole Church
- Christ is the Head of the Church

***He must be pointed to in everything!***

Ephesians 1:19: "And what is the exceeding All of greatness of His power toward us who believe, according to the inner working of His mighty power, which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from *the* dead..." (vs 19-20). Christ is the only One Who has been raised from the dead to immortality. No other human being!

The Pharaohs in Egypt are still dead! You look at their bones, their mummies, and they're still dead. They're just a bunch of clattering old bones wrapped up. Christ is the First and the only One raised from the dead to immortal life.

"...and set *Him* at His right hand in the heavenly *places*, far above every principality and authority and power and lordship, and **every name that is named**—not only in this age, but also in the *age to come*" (vs 20-21). This eliminates the pope—doesn't it! Jesus made it very clear: *call no man on earth your Father!* Yet, everybody calls the Catholic priest *father*, and the pope is the 'holy father,' or the 'holy see' as some people say. Of course, that's blasphemous toward Christ and God the Father, as well.

Verse 22: For He has subordinated all things under His feet, and has given Him *to be* head over all things to the *Church*, which is His body—the fullness of Him Who fills all things in all" (vs 22-23). This is the absolute primary prerequisite for anyone who is going to be an overseer, teacher and elder:

- that they understand this
- that they live by this
- that they operate their service or ministry to the people by this

If they don't, then they get all lifted up and carried away. We're going to see that there are some warnings about that a little later.

### **QUALIFICATIONS:**

1-Timothy 3:2: "Now then, it is obligatory *that* the overseer be **blameless**..." Not someone who is out carousing about and has a bad name and so forth.

"...*the husband of one wife*..." Back then there were some who had two wives. I cannot help but think of Jacob and his two wives, two handmaids and the terrible time that he had, the fight they had over him. I imagine that he would have rather stayed out and take care of the sheep than to come home with the big argument going on between Leah, Zilpah, Bilhah and Rachel.

"**vigilant**..." Always on guard to watch how he lives; to make sure that his life is conducted properly.

"...**serious-minded**..."—not Robin Williams and Jonathan Winters. That's fine for humor, but I tell you what, we used to have a minister who would conduct almost every one of his sermons like it was the semi-risqué, half-joking all the time. Everyone was in the aisles rolling with laughter. What good did it do? Where is he today?

"...**respectable**..."—in his character and so forth.

"...**hospitable**..."—being able to help and serve people with hospitality.

"...**skillful in teaching**" (v 2). There is a skill in teaching, which is you have to be able to put the Scriptures together properly so that you bring the teaching of the Scriptures so that there is going to be edification and learning for the brethren.

- What good does it do to come to church when you are taught nothing?
- What good does it do for someone to preach and he doesn't have clue as to what he is saying?
- *No good at all!*

Verse 3: "**not given to much wine**..." You certainly don't want to have a minister to come in with a hangover on Sabbath morning and attempt to preach. That has happened, also.

"...**not a bully**..."—someone who is not going to be just pushing his way around.

"...**not greedy for selfish gain**..." that has to do with gaining power, recognition, money—any

of those things.

"...but **kind, not a quarreler**..."—always given over to argumentation.

"...**not a lover of money**" (v 3). All of these thing tie in together.

Peter summarizes this in a very similar way, and again, let's see how Peter starts out: by showing the elders who were there that they also need to continuously look to Christ:

1-Peter 5:1: "*The elders who are among you I exhort, even as a fellow elder, and an eyewitness of the sufferings of Christ, and a partaker of the glory that is about to be revealed.*" He keynotes what he's saying based upon the resurrected Christ and His glory.

Verse 2: "**Feed the flock of God** *that is among you*..." That is the important thing!

- understand what you're doing
- help them to grow
- help them to understand the Word of God
- comfort them
- help them in their troubles and difficulties
- pray for them when they're sick

"...**exercising oversight not by compulsion, but willingly; not in fondness of dishonest gain, but with an eager attitude; not as exercising lordship over your possessions; but by being examples to the flock of God**" (vs 2-3). That's where the minister or teacher gets his authority:

- by his knowledge of the Word of God
- by his example
- by his love
- by what he teaches

Then if a problem comes up, he can rebuke with all authority, as Paul tells Titus 'rebuke with all authority'; which can be done. Then he has the Spirit of God, the character of God and the Word of God to back it up; not some authority that he takes to himself.

Notice that there's an accounting coming, v 4: "And when the Chief Shepherd is manifested, you shall receive an unfading, *eternal* crown of glory."

1-Timothy 3:4: "**One who rules his own house well, having his children in subjection with all respect**." You know what happens when the minister's children do not do that; it gets around the Church. What does that do? *Undercuts and kills anything he may say concerning anything!* Unfortunately, that is true. It's also true that anyone who has children knows that they get out and make decisions and do things that you don't even know

they do. So, it becomes quite a thing to try and keep that in a proper perspective.

Verse 5: “(For if a man does not know *how* to rule his own household, how will he take care of *the Church of God?*)” What is it based upon? *Family structure!*

- that’s why we’re called brethren
- that’s why God is the Father
- that’s why Christ is our elder Brother and our High Priest

***It’s all based on a family relationship!***

Verse 6: “**Not a novice...**”—one who has newly come to the faith. That means that if someone is baptized, they are not immediately put into an overseer’s job.

Example: Let’s understand how it was with Paul. Paul was knocked off his donkey on the way to Damascus. He went out into the desert for three years and was taught of Christ. He came back and witnessed that Christ, indeed, was the Savior. Then he came up to Jerusalem and was there for a couple of weeks, then went down to Tarsus—his own home city—and he stayed there and did nothing. He didn’t preach, teach, or do anything.

Then after the Church grew in Antioch, they sent Barnabas down to Antioch and he went over to Tarsus and got Paul—still called Saul—and brought him over to Antioch. Then after about a year in Antioch, both Saul—who was to become Paul—and Barnabas were ordained as apostles. That’s when Paul began to be used; not until then.

So, Paul was not a novice; not someone newly come to the faith. Here’s the reason: “...lest he become conceited *and* fall into *the same* condemnation as the devil” (v 6). There are two warnings that come concerning the devil:

Verse 7: “It is mandatory that he also have a good report from those *who are outside the Church*, lest he <sup>1</sup>**fall into reproach** and *the* <sup>2</sup>**snare of the devil.**” So there are the two things that happen.

Why could a novice become conceited and fall into the same condemnation of the devil? *Because he would get all lifted up in his vanity!* We’ve seen that, too! We would have to say that a novice would be someone who would graduate from high school, go to college, graduate from college and be baptized somewhere in that college time, then get married, be given a car and sent off to pastor a church.

That is a novice, someone newly come into the faith. They have no experience, no age. They have no life experience in just living. Then what

happens? *They get lifted up and conceited!* ‘I have this and that and I rule over all these people,’ especially if they’re in a hierarchy.

Now let’s look at the condemnation/snare of the devil. That’s exactly what happened to the one who became the devil; he got lifted up in his own conceit. This is where the expression ‘holier than thou’ came from, because he began to think he was better than God!

Isaiah 14:12: “How you are fallen from the heavens, O shining star... [Lucifer; the name of the devil] ...son of the morning! This is the god that the Masons worship; they say that Lucifer is the true God.

“...*How* you are cut down to the ground, you who weakened the nations!” (v 12). We are going to see that ‘he who exalts himself shall be abased.’ That’s fulfilled right here in v 12; here is his condemnation:

Verse 13: “For you have said in your heart, ‘**I will** ascend *into* the heavens, **I will** exalt my throne above the stars of God; **I will** also sit upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north. **I will** ascend above the heights of the clouds; **I will** be like the Most High” (vs 13-14). That’s exactly what happens when you have someone who has newly come to the faith and given a lot of responsibility. *They get all lifted up and puffed up!*

Here is another thing that happened to the devil, as part of his condemnation, Ezekiel 28:15: “You *were* perfect in your ways from the day that you were created, until iniquity was found in you. By the multitude of your merchandise they have filled your midst *with* violence, and you have sinned. Therefore, I will cast you as profane from the mountain of God, and I will destroy you, O covering cherub, from among the stones of fire. **Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty; you have corrupted your wisdom by reason of your brightness...**” (vs 15-17). This is the condemnation of the devil. He was condemned because he exalted himself.

Now let’s look at a couple of Scriptures showing what God has promised for all of those who exalt themselves. So, we can see part of the condemnation and difficulty of the devil and exalting yourself:

Luke 14:1: “Now, it came to pass, when He went into a house of one of the rulers of the Pharisees...” Who did Jesus say was their god? *The devil (John 8)!*

“...on *the* Sabbath to eat bread, that they were watching Him. And behold, there was a certain

man *who had dropsy standing* in front of Him. Then Jesus answered *and* spoke to the doctors of the law and to *the* Pharisees, saying, ‘Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath?’ But they were silent. And after taking hold *of him*, He healed him and *then* let *him* go. And He answered *and* said to them, ‘Who among you shall have a donkey or an ox fall into a pit, and will not immediately pull it out on the Sabbath Day?’ But again, they were not able to answer Him concerning these things. Then, observing how those who were invited were choosing out the chief places, He spoke a parable to them, saying, ‘When you are invited by anyone to a wedding feast, do not sit in the chief place, lest someone more honorable than you has been invited by him. For the one who invited you and him shall come to you and say, “Give place to this one,” and then shall you begin with shame to take the last place. But when you are invited, go and sit down in the last place, so that when the one who invited you comes, he may say to you, “Friend, come up higher.” Then shall you have honor in the presence of those who are sitting *at the table* with you. **For everyone who exalts himself shall be humbled, and the one who humbles himself shall be exalted**” (vs 1-11).

That’s a snare of the devil, *exalting!* We need to realize that anyone who is going to be an elder, overseer or teacher, that is a humbling experience. It is not to be used as an office of self-exaltation.

In Luke 18 we’re dealing with the highly exalted, which we’ll say is a *low mucky-muck!* I’ve talked about mucky-mucks, high mucky-mucks and super high mucky-mucks. We’ll put this one as a medium low mucky-muck who exalted himself and thinks he’s a high mucky-muck.

Luke 18:9: “And to some who trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others, He also spoke this parable.” Is that not the condemnation of the devil. He trusted in himself; ***I will*** exalt myself, ***I will*** set the throne, ***I will*** be like the Most High.’

Listen, you can’t trust in any of your own ability if you’re going to be an elder or overseer. You cannot, because it’s all going to fall flat on its face; it just won’t work.

“...trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others...” (v 9). That’s what the Pharisees did. They said of the people that they were to shepherd and teach. ‘These are common folk and they are ignorant.’ NO! So, Christ went on with the parable:

Verse 10: “Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one *was* a Pharisee and the other

a tax collector [publican].” A publican was always hated. Even today, no one loves the tax collector. I always pay my taxes, as much as possible, on the last day that it is due. It’s still within the law.

Verse 11: “The Pharisee stood and prayed **with himself** in this manner...” (v 11). He’s not praying to God; he’s praying with himself, though he says:

“...‘God, I thank You...’”—though his mind is not on Christ or God, Who are Holy, righteous, perfect, loving, kind and their magnificent calling; none of that is there.

“...**I** thank You that **I** am not like other men—...” (v 11). Those who compare themselves among themselves are not wise, and this is what he’s doing.

“...extortioners, unrighteous, adulterers— or even as this tax collector” (v 11). True, no one is to break the commandments of God to be an extortioner or unjust or an adulterer. Those are required! You have done nothing if you fulfill that. A publican is lower than that.

Verse 12: “**I** fast twice in the week, *and I* give a tithe *of* everything that **I** gain.” Notice all the **I**s.

- I thank You
- I am not
- I fast
- I give a tithe
- I gain (possess)

Five **I**s in that short, little prayer. Does he have his mind on himself? Is he exalting himself? *Yes! We’ll see that Christ said he was!*

Verse 13: “And the tax collector, standing afar off, would not even lift up his eyes to heaven, but beat himself on *the* chest, saying, ‘God, be merciful to me, a sinner.’” That’s how we need to approach God. Why? *Because we all have ‘the law of sin and death’ in us!* We need to go to God and ***know that He alone can forgive us!***

(go to the next track)

Verse 14 is the key:

- it’s not how you stand before human beings
- it’s not how other human beings look at you
- it’s not how many compliments you get from another person
- it’s not how many accomplishment you have done

***It is how your standing before God is!***

Jesus said, v 14: “I tell you, this man... [the publican] ...went down to his house justified, rather than the other. For everyone who exalts himself shall be humbled; and **the one who humbles himself shall be exalted.**”

You look at the word abased—or humbled—and that means it’s going to be ignominious in its end. Did that happen to Hitler? Was his end a total abasement? *Yes!* Self-exaltation of the great fuehrer of Germany, the Third Reich, found hovering and quivering in a bunker while the bombs and artillery shells were bombing Berlin, and he finally had to take a cyanide capsule to kill himself, and Eva Braun was with him and his body was burned. ***An ignominious end!*** That’s what abasement means.

Let’s show how this humbling, even when there is great sin, is what God is interested in. *He’s not interested in how good you can make yourself, because you can’t make yourself ‘good.’* No man can make himself ‘good,’ as far as standing before God! Only Christ can make someone ‘good.’

2-Chron. 33—Here is King Manasseh was king for 55 years. He committed all of these sins, all these evils, abominable pagan worship, even causing his children to pass through the fire. He was involved in witchcraft, familiar spirits, divinations, wizards and so forth. Then God sent him off into captivity.

2-Chronicles 33:10: “And the LORD spoke to Manasseh and to His people, but they would not listen. Wherefore, the LORD brought upon them the commanders of the army of the king of Assyria, who took Manasseh with hooks and bound him with chains and carried him to Babylon. And when he was in affliction, he sought the LORD his God and humbled himself greatly before the God of his fathers” (vs 10-12).

Here he was brought to his abasement, brought down low, removed from kingship, sent off into captivity, put into prison, *so he humbled himself!*

Verse 13: “And he prayed to Him, and He was entreated of him and heard his prayer, and brought him again to Jerusalem into his kingdom. Then **Manasseh knew** that the LORD *is* God.” That’s the whole point in everything that God wants everyone to know: ***that He is God! No one else and no other thing!***

God is interested in this repentance and so forth. This has to be with everyone who an elder, overseer or teacher; you also have to have that same

attitude. Always remember, as Paul said: ***we have nothing that we didn’t receive! Everything we have comes from God!***

- every physical thing
- every spiritual thing
- the knowledge of God’s Word
- being able to serve the brethren

***All of this comes from God!***

**Exalters and Enablers:**

You also have not only exalters, but you have enablers. Always keep that in mind. Wherever there is an exalter, there is an enabler. The enablers are generally the tares among the brethren.

2-Corinthians 11:4—Paul wrote: “For indeed, if someone comes preaching another Jesus... [he’s talking to the enablers of false apostles] ...whom we did not preach, or you receive a different spirit, which you did not receive, or a different gospel, which you did not accept, you put up with it as *something good*”—something wonderful. The enablers have allowed the exalters to exalt themselves.

Verse 5: “But I consider myself in no way inferior to those highly exalted *so-called* apostles.” That’s not referring to the apostles of Christ, because there was no chief apostle. This is the ‘hot-shot self-appointed’ apostles.

Verse 6: “For although *I may be* unpolished in speech, yet, *I am* not in knowledge; for in all things I have demonstrated this to you. Now, did I commit sin by humbling myself so that you might be exalted, because I preached the Gospel of God to you freely?” (vs 6-7).

Here’s what Paul is saying about the enablers, v 18: “Since many boast according to *the flesh...*” That’s what happens, because the ones who come and exalt themselves saying how great they are.

Verse 13: “For such *are* false apostles—deceitful workers who are transforming themselves into apostles of Christ... [an exaltation] ...And *it is* no marvel, for Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light.” (vs 13-14). We’ve talked about the snare and the condemnation of the devil.

Verse 15: “Therefore, *it is* no great thing if his servants also transform themselves as ministers of righteousness—whose end shall be according to their works.”

Verse 18: “Since many boast according to *the flesh...* [that’s what he’s talking about; not only

those teachers but those who are the enablers] ...I also will boast. For since you are *so* intelligent, you gladly bear with fools” (vs 18-19). In other words, ‘you are so smart that you allow fools,’ which is an oxymoron. If are so smart, then you shouldn’t allow fools. But you allow them gladly because ‘you’re so wise.’ He’s very sarcastic here.

Verse 20: “For you bear *it* if anyone brings you into bondage... [there’s the enabler of the hierarchy] ...if anyone devours *you*, if anyone takes *from you*, if anyone exalts himself, if anyone beats you on the face.” That’s what they were doing. They were allowing it. So, in a sense, when you have the exalter and the enablers together, they deserve each other. That’s what Paul is saying here.

Verse 23: “Are they servants of Christ? (I am speaking as if I were out of my mind.)....”

Now, here’s another thing that enablers will do. The *exalters* will do it, and the *enablers* will receive it”

Galatians 1:6: “I am astonished that you are so quickly being turned away from Him Who called you into *the* grace of Christ, to a different gospel, which *in reality* is not another *Gospel*...” (vs 6-7). If there is one true Gospel, then there can’t be any other. If there is another, it’s a counterfeit; no doubt about it.

“...but there are some who are troubling you and are desiring to pervert the Gospel of Christ” (v 7)—those who would be the exalters. If you go along with it then you’re an enabler.

Verse 8: “But if we... [a direct reference to all the apostles] ...or even an angel from heaven, should preach a gospel to you *that* is contrary to what we have preached, LET HIM BE ACCURSED! As we have said before, I also now say again. If anyone is preaching a gospel contrary to what you have received, LET HIM BE ACCURSED!” (vs 8-9).

So, everyone who is going to be a teacher, pay attention! It better be right and true right down the line with the Word of God, otherwise, you’re going to find yourself in an accursed position. God will correct you and take care of you. What happens when they pervert the Gospel?

Verse 10: “Now then, am I striving to please men, or God? Or am I motivated to please men? For if I am yet pleasing men, I would not be a servant of Christ.” So, ***all the false apostles will please men!*** If you do you’re not the servant of Christ.

The exalters have the enablers, and the snare and the reproach of the devil is to go ahead and pervert the Gospel, to make it pleasing. It’s like

someone said, amidst all of these polls that are taken, one pollster said of President Clinton: ‘If they impeach him and remove him from office, his approval will go to 125%!’ Someone said, ‘Aren’t we glad that God didn’t give the Ten Commandments by poll?’ You wouldn’t have them! That’s what people-pleasers do.

If you please God and it doesn’t please some people, then that’s just too bad. You don’t have to be deliberately offensive, but sometimes it works out that there’s nothing you can do to please them. When it comes to the point that in order to please people you start compromising the Word of God, then you’re in trouble with God.

1-Timothy 3:8: “In the same way also, the **deacons** who **serve**...”—from the Greek word ‘*diakonos*’—from which we get the English word *deacon*. This is talking about deacons and deaconesses here.

“...*must* be serious-minded, not hypocritical, not given to much wine, not greedy for selfish gain... [power] ...holding the mystery of the faith with a pure conscience.... [able to understand the Word of God] ...**And let those who meet the qualifications also be proved first**...” (vs 8-10). I think that’s where we have gone wrong in the past. We have not let them be *proved first* to make sure that their fruits are the fruits that come from God.

“...then let them *be appointed to serve*, if they are *found to be* blameless. In the same way also, *their wives must* be serious-minded, not slanderers, sober *and* faithful in all things” (vs 10-11). That’s all self-evident; we don’t have to go over that in any great detail.

Verse 12: “Let the deacons be husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own households well. For those who have served well acquire for themselves a good standing and much confidence in *the* faith that *is* in Christ Jesus” (vs 12-13). Again, Paul points them right back to Christ.

Verse 14: “These things I am writing to you, hoping to come to you shortly; but if I should delay, *you have these things in writing*, so that you may know how one is obligated to conduct oneself in the house of God... [one who is an overseers, which Timothy was] ...which is *the Church of the living God, the pillar and foundation of the Truth*” (vs 14-15). That’s what clarifies what the Church of God should be.

{note the sermon series on *The Epistle to the Ephesians* that explains in detail v 16}

Verse 16: “And undeniably, great is the mystery of Godliness: God was manifested in *the*

flesh, was justified in *the* Spirit, was seen by angels, was proclaimed among *the* Gentiles, was believed on in *the* world, was received up in glory.”

### **1-Timothy 4:**

1-Timothy 4 is a very interesting chapter. This is the one where most of them turn. We’ll read v 4 out of context in the *King James Version*.

1-Timothy 4:4 (KJV): “For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving.”—therefore, now that we have refrigerators and freezers we can eat pork, shrimp, lobster, clams, and all of those gooey abominable things like sea-cucumbers and octopus, squid, calamari and all of that sort of stuff. That isn’t what it says or what it means.

What we’re going to learn is that those kinds of things end up being a sign of the first step into apostasy.

1-Timothy 4:1 (FV): “Now, the Spirit tells *us* explicitly that in *the* latter times some shall apostatize from the faith, *and* shall follow **deceiving spirits**... [notice who is doing the leading] ...**and doctrines of demons**.”

When you apostatize from the Truth and the faith of God, then you give yourself over to spirits who lead you in a way to take you from God. Like anything else, ‘*there is pleasure in sin for a season*.’ It’s very deceptive. “...deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons.” We’ve seen that happen in the Worldwide Church of God, and other churches, to where it is almost ridiculous to even bring it up. But that’s exactly what happened to them.

Verse 2: “Speaking lies in hypocrisy, their consciences having been cauterized *with a hot iron*.” When you cauterize something, you burn it and put a scar on it. How do they do that. We covered part of that in Gal. 1.

When it comes along, at first it is subtle; a little here and a little there, and they are still using the Word of God to bring about their heresy. How can that be if the Word of God is Truth? *It’s just like taking numbers, you can take the numbers and line them up in a column*, but if you give wrong values to it, you come up with the wrong answer.

Example: 3+3=4-1/4. You’re using true numbers but you’re coming up with a false answer. That’s what these apostatizing ministers do in using the Word of God. They use the Word of God, but they wrongly divide it, or add it.

2-Corinthians 4:1: “Therefore, having this ministry, according as we have received mercy, we

are not fainthearted. For we have personally renounced the hidden things of dishonest gain, not walking in *cunning* craftiness...” (vs 1-2)—having an agenda; that’s what all those who stealthily sneak in do; they have an agenda, which they will bring out sooner or later that doctrine divides. That is an agenda to bring in false doctrine.

“...nor handling the Word of God deceitfully...” (v 2). The Word of God is Truth, but you can handle it *deceitfully*, and put it together in such a way that you come up with false doctrines. I just read how you can do that (2-Tim. 4:4). You read that one verse!

- Have you read the Scripture? *Yes!*
- Is it misapplied if you say that now you can eat all the unclean things? *Yes! It’s misapplied!*

You’re handling the Word of God deceitfully because you read the one verse and you don’t read before and after, nor do you go to the other verses in the Old Testament to show the meaning and the sense of it.

“...but by manifestation of the Truth... [truthfully presented] ...we are commending ourselves to every man’s conscience before God. But if our Gospel is hidden, it is hidden to those who are perishing; in whom the god of this age has blinded the minds of those who do not believe, lest the light of the Gospel of the glory of Christ, Who is *the* image of God, should shine unto them. For **we do not preach our own selves, but Christ Jesus *the* Lord**, and ourselves your servants for Jesus’ sake” (vs 2-5). Notice again how Paul always goes back to Christ!

That’s how they do it. That’s how apostasies start, and then a little more and a little more, and we know that ‘a little leaven leavens the whole lump.’ Pretty soon the whole thing is leavened.

1-Timothy 4:2: “Speaking lies in hypocrisy, their consciences having been cauterized *with a hot iron*; forbidding to marry; *and commanding* to abstain from meats...” (vs 2-3)—vegetarianism; not a clean and unclean meat question. This is to eat meat or not eat meat. If a person needs to be a vegetarian, fine.

As Paul said, ‘For those who eat meat, don’t get mad at them, and those who are meat-eaters, don’t put down vegetarians’ (Rom. 14). But ***you cannot make it a doctrine from God!*** Why?

Verse 3: “Forbidding to marry; *and commanding* to abstain from meats...” Of course, “...forbidding to marry...” takes care of the whole Catholic situation of celibacy and perpetual

virginity. God never intended that. He didn't make us male and female so that we should never be married. That's ludicrous and stupid! Yet, a whole 'religion' is based on that and they think it's Holy and righteous.

Then, "...*commanding* to abstain from meats [which God] created to be received with thanksgiving..." (v 3). So, there are certain meats that God created to be received. Did He create *all* meats to be received? *No!*

"...by the faithful, even *by* those who know the Truth" (v 3). What is Truth? *Your Word is Truth (John 17:17)!* We have to look to the Word of God.

Verse 4: "For every creature of God *designated for human consumption* is good... [for human consumption] ...and nothing to be refused, *if* it is received with thanksgiving, because it is sanctified... [specifically set apart] ...by the Word of God and prayer" (vs 4-5).

Where do we find in the Word of God concerning clean and unclean meats? This is very basic, but I tell you what, some people at the very first announcement of twisting the Scripture in Acts 10 and Mark 7, gathered together out in the hall of the meeting hall and were deciding what they were going to have at the Red Lobster that night; that very night! Not even taking the time to say, 'This is the strangest thing I've heard; I'd better check it out.'

Now, I want to give you the end of the story before we go to the beginning of it, Leviticus 11:44: "For I *am* the LORD your God..." Whenever He says that, we need to pay attention. He's basing what He says on Himself.

"...and you shall sanctify yourselves, and you shall be Holy, for I *am* Holy.... [Peter repeated that in 1-Pet. 1:16] ...Neither shall you defile yourselves with any kind of creeping thing that creeps on the earth; for I *am* the LORD Who brought you up out of the land of Egypt to be your God. You shall, therefore, be Holy, for I *am* Holy. This *is* the law of the animals, and of the fowl, and of every living creature that moves in the waters, and of every creature that creeps on the earth, **to make a difference between the unclean and the clean, and between the creature that may be eaten and the creature that may not be eaten**" (vs 44-47).

*There it is set aside by the Word of God!*

Verse 1: "And the LORD spoke to Moses and to Aaron, saying to them, 'Speak to the children of Israel, saying...'" (vs 1-2). This is not a Law of Moses or Aaron. This is of God, but they conveyed the information to the children of Israel. This is the Law of God!

"...These *are* the animals which you shall eat among all the animals that are in the earth" (v 2). This takes care of vegetarianism. This is a command to eat meat. Most vegetarians today have to go to the doctor to get B-12 shots because they don't have enough of the B-vitamin and they become anemic. They're anemic because they're going against the Word of God that says these are the beasts that you shall eat:

Verse 3: "Whatever divides the hoof and is cloven-footed, *chewing* the cud, among the animals, that you shall eat. Only, you shall not eat these among those that *chew* the cud, or of those that divide the hoof: the camel, for he *chews* the cud but does not divide the hoof, he is unclean to you. And the rock badger, because it *chews* the cud, but does not divide the hoof, it *is* unclean to you. And the hare [rabbit], because it *chews* the cud but does not divide *the* hoof, it *is* unclean to you. And the swine, though it divides the hoof and is cloven-footed, yet, it does not *chew* the cud; it *is* unclean to you. **You shall not eat of their flesh, and you shall not touch their dead body. They are unclean to you**" (vs 3-8).

When they were recently considering—which will bring a lot of animal viruses into the human realm—bringing in hogs to produce replacement parts, livers and things like this. One doctor said that it would cost \$18,000 just to put one pig through a virus examination to find out which viruses were in it. They not going to do that, because they're not going to pay \$18,000, they will just randomly, willy-nilly put them into people. Lo and behold, there are going to be all these *swine viruses!*

What do they call most of the flu that we get? *Swine flu!* You just notice that over a period of time those people who eat a lot of pork, when winter comes along, what do they get? *They get a lot of flu over and over again!*

Then it talks about what is in the waters that you can eat and not eat; and then the birds and the creeping things that you can eat, which are basically locust, grasshoppers and a certain kind of beetle. God has that so when famine comes—and there are lots of those around—you can crunch on those. I haven't eaten any, yet. All the rest—bats, mice and all that sort of thing—are all unclean.

Deut. 14 talks about the same thing, clean and unclean meats. If God says one thing one time, He means it, and when He says it twice He really means it.

Deuteronomy 14:1: "You *are* the children of the LORD your God..." Is that what we are called? *Yes, we're the children of God! (1-John 3:1-3).*

“...You shall not cut yourselves nor make any baldness between your eyes for the dead, for you are a Holy people to the LORD your God, and the LORD has chosen you to be a specially treasured people to Himself, above all the nations that are on the earth. You shall not eat any abominable thing” (vs 1-3)—then it lists them all out, just not in quite the lengthy detail that is in Lev. 11.

The one that I have always wanted to eat—I don’t know if I have the heart to do it—is a giraffe. When we were in Salt Lake City we used to go to the zoo and they had a really nice zoo. It wasn’t big, but they had a giraffe house where you could walk up and you would be at the level of the giraffes’ heads. You could feed them, and they would have the softest noses and the biggest eyes. I do suppose that if the neck of a turkey is tough, I imagine that those giraffe necks are tough. They would only be good for stew. There’s not too much to them, but I’ve often thought that I would not mind eating some giraffe. That is a clean animal.

A lot of these in 1-Tim. 4 are just instructions, not a study of the Scriptures; 1-Timothy 4:4: “For every creature of God *designated for human consumption* is good, and nothing to be refused, *if* it is received with thanksgiving, because it is sanctified... [specifically set apart] ...by the Word of God and prayer. **If you are teaching these things to the brethren...**” (vs 4-6). Not only what Paul just gave here, but everything in 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Tim.; expand it out to that, because that’s the whole indication here.

“...you will be a good servant of Jesus Christ, being nourished by the words of the faith and of the good doctrines... [Godly teachings] ...that you have closely followed. But refuse profane and old wives’ fables; rather, exercise... [training] ...yourself unto Godliness”(vs 6-7)—constantly doing this. Training by:

- study
- teaching
- preaching

Verse 8: “For physical exercise is profitable for a short time...” If you’re training yourself physically, you can build up your muscles, it profits for a short time, but doesn’t last forever, especially for those of us who are getting older. Youth flees, and it happens to everyone. When you’re young you don’t think it will happen to you. But when you get older, you’re surprised when it does; it does happen!

“...but Godliness is profitable for everything, having *the* promise of life—of the *life* that now *is*, and of the *life* that *is* coming. This

saying *is* faithful and worthy of full acceptance. Now, it is for this *reason that* we are laboring, and we are personally suffering reproach because we have hope in *the* living God, Who is *the* Savior of all men, especially of those who are believers. **These things command and teach**. Do not allow anyone to despise your youth...” (vs 8-12). This ‘knocks in a cocked hat’ that all those who are elders have to be older in age. Timothy was young, maybe 25-30 at this point, I don’t know.

“...but be an example to the believers—in word, in conduct, in love, in Spirit, in faith *and* in purity” (v 12). Again, follow the example of those who lead you.

Verse 14: Do not neglect the *spiritual* gift *that is* in you, which was given to you by prophecy with *the* laying on of the hands of the elderhood.” Paul also was there and ordained him.

2-Timothy 1:6: “For this reason, I admonish you to stir up the gift of God that is in you by the laying on of my hands. For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of sound-mindedness” (vs 6-7).

There is with the laying on of hands, to be set aside to be ordained to be a teacher or an overseer, and there is a special gift that is given. It doesn’t come before, but at the time of ordination. It can also be increased and developed as time goes by. Paul’s apostleship was also one of grace:

Ephesians 3:7: “Of which I became a servant according to the gift of the grace of God...” [that’s what happens when a man is ordained] ...*which was* given to me through the inner working of His power.”

- for the sake of teaching
- for the sake of faith
- for the sake of anointing

It’s not something that a person has before they’re ordained.

Verse 8: “To me, who am less than the least of all the saints, was this grace given, that I might preach the Gospel among the Gentiles—even the unsearchable riches of Christ.” This is what he’s talking about.

1-Timothy 4:14: “Do not neglect the *spiritual* gift *that is* in you, which was given to you by prophecy with *the* laying on of the hands of the elderhood. **Meditate on these things; give yourself wholly to them**... [to be completely dedicated to it] ...**so that your growth in the faith may be apparent to all**. Be diligent with yourself and with the doctrines; continue in them. For in doing this,

you will save both yourself and those who hear you”  
(vs 15-16).

When you get down to it, 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Tim., Titus and Philemon—but especially 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Tim. and Titus—are books that ***show a person how to really conduct his life if he’s a teacher, minister or overseer. He needs to give himself over to doing that in a way that God would want him to!***

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter (except where noted)

Also referenced:

Sermon Series

- *Judge Righteous Judgment*
- *Epistle; to the Ephesians*

Study paper: “Binding” and “Loosing” in the New Testament (cbcg.org)

FRC:bo

Transcribed: 2-23-15

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) 1 Timothy 3:1-5
- 2) Exodus 18:19-22, 21
- 3) 2 Chronicles 19:5-7
- 4) Acts 20:28-30
- 5) Hebrews 13:7, 12-13,17
- 6) 1 Peter 2:25
- 7) Ephesians 1:19-23
- 8) 1 Timothy 3:2-3
- 9) 1 Peter 5:1-4
- 10) 1 Timothy 3:4-7
- 11) Isaiah 14:12-14
- 12) Ezekiel 28:15-17
- 13) Luke 14:1-11
- 14) Luke 18:9-14
- 15) 2 Chronicles 33:10-13
- 16) 2 Corinthians 11:1-7, 18, 13-15, 18-20, 23
- 17) Galatians 1:6-10
- 18) 1 Timothy 3:8-16
- 19) 1 Timothy 4:4, 1-2
- 20) 1 Corinthians 4:1-5
- 21) 1 Timothy 4:2-5
- 22) Leviticus 11:44-47, 1-8
- 23) Deuteronomy 14:1-3
- 24) 1 Timothy 4:4-12, 14
- 25) 1 Timothy 1:6-7
- 26) Ephesians 3:7-8
- 27) 1 Timothy 4:14-16

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- 2 Peter 2
- John 8
- Galatians 1
- Romans 14
- John 17:17
- Acts 10
- Mark 7
- 1 Peter 1:16
- 1 John 3:13

## Pastoral Epistles V

# Charges To the Ministry & How to Handle Correction

(1-Timothy 5)  
Fred R. Coulter

There are certain things that I want us to look at when we're going through these things here. I want to pick out all the things where Timothy is *exhorted* to do this or that or the other thing.

1-Timothy 4:6: "If you are teaching these things to the brethren, you will be a good servant of Jesus Christ, being nourished by the words of the faith and **of the good doctrines** that you have closely followed. But refuse profane and old wives' fables; rather, exercise yourself unto Godliness. For physical exercise is profitable for a short time; but Godliness is profitable for everything, having the promise of life—of the *life* that now *is*, and of the *life* that *is* coming. This saying *is* faithful and worthy of full acceptance. Now, it is for this *reason* that we are laboring, and we are **personally** suffering reproach... (vs 6-10)—from the Greek verb that is called *the middle voice!* That means that you are the subject and the object: *I myself*. You don't want to say 'I myself' all the time.

"...we are **personally** suffering reproach because we have hope in *the* living God, Who *is the* Savior of all men, especially of those who are believers. **These things command and teach**" (vs 10-11).

Notice that he didn't say to 'suggest.' He didn't say they were 'guidelines.' Doctrines are *teachings*; they are not guidelines! Doctrine does divide Truth from error, righteousness from sin. So, when you have those who say that doctrine doesn't matter, what you're doing is going the *broad way* of Satan the devil. He's the one who says that doctrine doesn't matter. He's the one who told Eve, 'God didn't tell you the truth, go ahead and eat of the tree; doctrine doesn't matter.'

Doctrine is a *teaching*, and God taught them not to eat of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. So they did, and it caused sin. It's pretty plain here: "These things **command and teach**."

### **Survey of Command and Teach:**

1-Timothy 1:3: "When I was going to Macedonia, I exhorted you to remain in Ephesus, in order that you might *solemnly* **charge some** not to teach other doctrines." When it comes to the Truth vs error, true doctrine vs wrong/false/lying doctrine—there's a difference in degree—then whomever is the teacher or the elder, he has full

command of the Scriptures to charge them, *to command them*. Of course, this is publicly.

Here are some of the things that they were doing, v 4: "Nor to pay attention to myths and endless genealogies, which lead to empty speculations rather than to edification from God, which *is* in faith." Everything is to be in faith and up-building the Church.

You've got all these "...myths and endless genealogies, which lead to empty speculations..." that's exactly what has happened with a lot of prophecies. A lot of empty speculation so that when it comes down to the nitty-gritty, and the time comes, what happens? *You've got an empty bucket! You have nothing!*

The Mormons have given over to genealogies. It's not wrong to know who you've come from or things like that. This thing here was that there were a lot of Levities coming around and saying that the only ones authorized to be teachers are Levites, and 'here's my genealogy.' This is what it's referring to. To be a minister or teacher in the New Testament is a *calling*, based upon the qualifications. It doesn't matter who you are, or who your mother and father were; it's a matter of what God is doing in your life. That's what the important thing is!

Verse 5: "Now, the purpose **of the commandment** is love out of a pure heart..." Love does have authority. That's the thing that needs to be clarified. But notice the difference in the purpose:

"...love out of a pure heart, and a good conscience, and genuine faith" (v 5). Whereas in v 4, the "...myths and endless genealogies, which lead to empty speculations..." puff up the individual who is bringing them, because he feels important; 'I have a secret...' That's the way it comes across.

We're finding in many fellowship groups, not necessarily those with us, but we hear from other fellowship groups, and occasionally with ours, someone comes in and they have this wonderful new doctrine, and it's just vain, empty speculation. The way things are, you never know, tomorrow you may die. So, what does speculation have to do with anything? "...love out of a pure heart, and a good conscience, and genuine faith" (v 5). That's the whole purpose of it.

True authority, with the Word of God is

based upon the love of God. This also does away with hierarchies, but it doesn't leave the one who is leading without any strength of character or without any power of the Word or Spirit of God to take care of situations; he can do it.

Verse 6: "From which some, having missed the mark, have turned aside unto vain jangling; desiring to be teachers of *the law*..." (vs 6-7). Everyone wants to be a teacher, but James says, 'Don't many of you desire to be teachers, because you know that teachers will receive the sterner judgment,' which can also be condemnation (James 3:1).

Verse 7: "Desiring to be teachers of *the law* neither understanding what they are saying, nor what they are strongly affirming." I have heard this over and over again. People send me taped sermons from different ones who claim to be teachers. Some of them I listen to, very strugglingly.

One man is saying he's doing 'an Elijah work' while saying he's not Elijah. It's just all kinds of vain speculations. They have to go and convert the house of Windsor so that Prince Charles will know. They've got to go over to the Jews and preach to them so that the Jews will know. That's vain empty speculation. What you're trying to do is open a door that only God can open, and do a work that only God can appoint someone to do.

No one appoints himself to do any work for God! If you want to do any work for God, love the brethren, serve them and edify them; that's what to do. That's what Paul is saying here, because what happens is that they don't understand what they are saying.

One man just rattles off Scripture and he thinks that every thought that comes into his head is the inspired Word of God. It's just craziness; yet, some brethren—because they're not grounded and have been dumbed down through the years—sit there and miss the whole point.

If you put these Scriptures together this way, then you get the impact of what Paul is telling Timothy.

Verse 18: "**This charge** I am personally committing to you, *my son Timothy*, in accordance with the prophecies that were made long ago concerning you; in order that by them you yourself might wage a good war, holding to *the faith* and a good conscience. For some, having cast aside *a good conscience*, have made shipwreck in regard to the faith" (vs 18-19). Just like the Titanic, it went down; everyone was arrogant, 'Full speed ahead,' and there it went!

Verse 20: "Of whom are Hymeneus and

Alexander, whom I turned over to Satan in order that they may learn not to blaspheme."

What is the ultimate result of following vain speculations, genealogies, preaching on things you know nothing about? What is it going to lead to? *You're ultimately going to be turned over to Satan the devil!* It ultimately comes down to the thing that we have seen many, many times down through the years: *a little leaven leavens the whole lump!* Pretty soon they just get carried away.

We've seen this happen with the Worldwide Church of God; they got all carried away with these wrong doctrines and where are they today? *They're just a mainstream Protestant religion!* They've shipwrecked the faith of a lot of people! God is going to hold them accountable!

1-Timothy 3:14: "These things I am writing to you, hoping to come to you shortly; but if I should delay, *you have these things in writing*... [that's the whole sum of what he's saying] ...so that you may know how **one is obligated**... [under compulsion from God] ...to conduct oneself in *the house of God*, which is *the Church of the living God, the pillar and foundation of the Truth*" (vs 14-15).

That's why it's so very important that we understand and realize that when you get into these vain speculations and empty genealogies then you get away from the pillar and the foundation of the Truth, which is the Word of God. And since Christ is the Truth, you're getting away from Christ, and then gradually you get off into preaching another Jesus, preaching another Gospel.

1-Timothy 5:7: "Now **these things command**..." There was plenty of authority, but it was based on the love of God, the Scripture of God, and all are subject to it, including Timothy.

Verse 21: "**I charge you before God and the Lord Jesus Christ and the elect angels**... [you can't have any more solemn charge than that; charge means *command*] ...that you observe these things without prejudice, *and let* nothing be done by partiality."

1-Timothy 6:2: "...These things **teach and exhort**... [v 13]: "**I charge you in the sight of God**..." There you have it!

Verse 20: "O Timothy, guard the *doctrine* which has been entrusted *to you*, avoiding profane, empty babblings, and contradictions of false knowledge *that is called science*."

2-Timothy 3:15: "And that from a child you have known the Holy Writings, which are able to make you wise unto salvation through faith, which is

in Christ Jesus. All Scripture *is* God-breathed and *is* profitable for doctrine, for conviction, for correction, for instruction in righteousness so that **the man of God may be complete, fully equipped for every good work**” (vs 15-17). He’s talking about all the tools that a minister is to have. “...the man of God...” is a minister who is teaching.

2-Timothy 4:1: “**I charge you, therefore, in the sight of God, even the Lord Jesus Christ**, Who is ready to judge *the* living and *the* dead at His appearing and His kingdom.... [that’s what needs to be preached] **...Preach the Word! Be urgent in season and out of season; convict, rebuke, encourage**, with all patience and doctrine. For there shall come a time when they will not tolerate sound doctrine; but according to their own lusts they shall accumulate to themselves *a great number of teachers, having ears itching to hear what satisfies their cravings...* [that’s the whole meaning of it] ...And they shall turn away their own ears from the Truth; and they shall be turned aside unto myths” (vs 1-4).

1-Timothy 5:1: “**Do not sharply rebuke an older man...**” In the *King James Version* it says ‘elder.’ But later on it says there is a distinction made between older men who are just in the congregation and elders who are ordained.

“...but exhort *him* as a father, *and* younger *men* as brothers” (v 1)—talking about people in general in the congregation according to different age brackets.

Verse 2: “*Exhort* older women as mothers, *and* younger women as sisters, with all purity. *Show* honor to widows who *are* indeed widows *by providing for their needs*; but if any widow has children or grandchildren, let them first learn to fulfill *their* obligation to their own household, and to render recompense to *their* parents. For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God. Now, she who *is* a widow indeed, and who is alone *in the world*, has *her* hope in God, and continues in supplications and prayers night and day. But the one who is living for self-gratification is dead *while* she lives. Now these things command that they may be blameless” (vs 2-7).

We have many things here that show us some very profound things actually taken right out from the Old Testament. A lot of these are based on the fifth commandment: *honor your father and mother*. Which then, if you honor your father and mother, and you have brothers and sisters, then that also would have to be included in the family commandment. After all, father and mother are to be joined in one flesh and they are to be fruitful and multiply; so it’s all included here.

We’re going to see how a lot of these things came straight out of the Old Testament. But it’s not really the *Old* Testament as such, but it’s the Word of God that God gave to Israel so that they would have, know and understand the Word of God.

Leviticus 19:32: “You shall rise up before the gray head and honor the face of the old man, and fear your God. **I am the LORD.**” The whole thing is really profound, and based on the fact that “...I am the LORD.”

Verse 11: “You shall not steal, nor lie, nor be deceitful to one another.” We can find commands in the New Testament where you should not lie to one another. Let your ‘yes’ be *yes*, and your ‘no’ be *no*.

Verse 12: “And you shall not swear by My name falsely; nor shall you profane the name of your God. **I am the LORD.**”

In your own study, see how many times that God says, “...I *am* the LORD.” It becomes very important. All of these are by the Word of God.

Verse 13: “You shall not defraud your neighbor nor rob *him*. The wages of him who is hired shall not stay with you all night until the morning. You shall not curse the deaf, nor put a stumbling block before the blind, but shall fear your God. **I am the LORD.** You shall do no unrighteousness in judgment...” (vs 13-15)—a counterpart of *Judge Righteous Judgment*; {note sermon series}

“...You shall not respect the person of the poor, nor honor the person of the mighty, *but* you shall judge your neighbor in righteousness. You shall not go *as* a slanderer among your people; you shall not stand idly by the blood of your neighbor. **I am the LORD.** You shall not hate your brother in your heart. You shall always admonish your neighbor, that you may not bear sin because of him. You shall not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children of your people, but you shall love your neighbor as yourself. **I am the LORD**” (vs 15-18).

All of those things we can find a counterpart in the New Testament. The whole purpose that I want to show is how similar it is when we read what the Apostle Paul says.

Deuteronomy 10:17: “For the LORD your God *is* God of gods, and Lord of lords, a great God, the mighty and awesome God Who does not respect persons nor take a bribe.” Notice how similar that sounds to Rev. 19 where He’s Lord of lords and King of kings.

Verse 18: “He executes justice for the fatherless and widow, and loves the stranger in

giving him food and clothing. Therefore, love the stranger, for you were strangers in the land of Egypt. You shall fear the LORD your God. You shall serve Him, and you shall hold fast to Him, and swear by His name” (vs 18-20).

Deuteronomy 24:17: “You shall not pervert the rightful judgment of the stranger *nor* of the fatherless; nor take a widow’s clothing as a pledge.” That’s why it talks about the widows, the older women as mothers and so forth. God expects them to be taken care of, not taken advantage of.

Verse 18: “But you shall remember that you were a slave in Egypt, and the LORD your God redeemed you from there. Therefore, **I command you** to do this thing.”

This is quite an interesting study if you would look it all up about the widows and fatherless.

Exodus 22:22: “You shall not afflict any widow or fatherless child. If you afflict them in any way, and they cry at all to Me, I will surely hear their cry. And My wrath shall burn, and I will kill you with the sword, and your wives shall be widows, and your sons fatherless” (vs 22-24). God shows that He’s going to answer and take care of those things.

Let’s see what they were doing in the New Testament. This is what seems to happen in so many ‘religions’ just like it was with the scribes and Pharisees; they put on a show and impress the widows; they prey upon their weaknesses and their sympathies and take things from them:

Matthew 23:13<sub>[transcriber’s correction]</sub>: “But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you devour widows’ houses, and as a pretext you offer prayers of great length. Because of this, you shall receive *the* greater judgment.”

Let’s see how widows are very willing. It is true, the older you get the more dependent you are, the more frail you are, the more fearful you are, and therefore, widows—and elderly men, as well, because there are widowers—become an easy prey for this kind of thing: for people to come along and exercise authority over them. That’s why Paul was very clear in not exercising authority over them, but to treat them like fathers and mothers. In other words, with the same deference that you would with the fifth commandment of honoring your father and mother. That’s what all of this is based upon.

Luke 20:45: “And as all the people were listening, He said to His disciples, ‘Beware of the scribes... [be on guard against them] ...who like to walk in robes, and love salutations in the marketplaces, and *the* chief seats in the synagogues, and *the* chief places at the suppers” (vs 45-46).

They want to be the first with the most; big mucky-mucks!

Verse 47: “Who devour the houses of widows, and as a pretext pray at great length. These shall receive the greater judgment.”

Luke 21:1: “When He looked up, He saw the rich men casting their offerings into the treasury. Then He also saw a certain poor widow drop in two small coins” (vs 1-2). So, you can see the difference in the attitude. That’s why it’s so very, very important.

Verse 3: “And He said, ‘Of a truth, I tell you, this poor widow has put in more than all *of them*; for all these have from their abundance cast into the offerings to God; but she, out of her poverty, did put *in* all the livelihood that she had” (vs 3-4). That’s why widows are so easily taken advantage of.

Another thing that is important, too, is that churches should not come along and put pressure upon anyone who is getting close to ‘putting their feet in the grave’; be pressured and intimidated into signing over their estates and money to the church. If a person wants to voluntarily do it, because of certain circumstances, that’s perfectly all right. But when a church has an active program where they go out and solicit the elderly, widows and widowers to do that, then that’s just based upon greed! The Church does not need that kind of money, income, land or property, because that is just spoiling those who are weak and don’t have enough.

Acts 6 shows that even the Church, right at the beginning, their concern was to take care of the widows. God does not want the widows being neglected. I know that some of the nicest letters that we get are from widows and the elderly. We have a high percentage of them because God wants them perfected before the end comes.

When they send in their small offerings, that is worth more than many, many large offerings; simply because it’s from their heart and they’re doing the very best that they can do.

Acts 6:1: “Now, in those days, when the number of the disciples was multiplied, there arose a complaint by the Greeks against the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the daily ministrations.” God wanted this taken care of, so He inspired how it would be done.

James 1:27: “Pure and undefiled religion before God and *the* Father is this: to visit orphans and widows in their afflictions, *and* to keep oneself unspotted from the world.”

Note sermon series: *Why God Hates Religion*. Some people have not really grasped the

fact that what we are is not a 'religion.' What we are into is a *way of living!* 'Religion' is something that they world has on *their way* of approaching God. But if you want an interesting search in the Bible sometime, you will not find the two words *Christian religion* together. Judaism was a 'religion.' That strayed *from the way of God* that God gave to Moses for the children of Israel. So, *a 'religion' really takes from God to create their own!*

Rather, God gives a *way to live* so that you become *His!* It's a whole different perspective. When James was writing he was writing to the 12 tribes of Israel:

Verse 1:1: "James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes, which *are* in the dispersion: Greetings!"

Some people got all upset when I said he was writing to unconverted people. In the *Epistle of James* series you will see that I said he wrote to a combination of unconverted people and the converted people, and there was actually the Church within the synagogue. You can't say that all the 12 tribes were converted. I mean, even in a Church of God—hopefully all those attending with us are converted—you have to admit that everyone who attends is not converted.

So, when James says in v 26: "If anyone among you considers himself to be religious... [doing things of an outward show] ...and does not control his tongue, but deceives his own heart, this one's religion *is* vain. Pure and undefiled religion before God and *the* Father is this... [the pure outward manifestation of your works, called *religion*] ...to visit orphans and widows in their afflictions, *and* to keep oneself unspotted from the world" (vs 26-27).

There are even carnal people who do that. You don't have to be converted to do this. You can keep yourself unspotted from the world, you're not in gross sin, and I would say that there are a lot of people who are in the Protestant religions who do this very thing. God is not against that, but *God's way is not a way of 'religion.'*

That's why when you come to Job everything that Job did was all good. God honored it in the letter of the Law. But the letter of the Law does not necessarily count for spiritual salvation, because you have to go beyond that. That's why Job had to repent of all of his 'pure and undefiled religion.' Even though it was 'pure and undefiled' it did not lead to salvation. Otherwise, you would have salvation by works.

Paul shows how this should be done, and

that they are to have certain standards by which there are those to help the widows; your own relatives and whatever help you may give.

1-Timothy 5:8: "But if anyone does not provide for his own *needy* relatives—and especially *members of his* household—he has denied the faith and is worse than an unbeliever. Let a widow be put on the list *for assistance* if she is not less than sixty years *of age*, *if she has* been the wife of one husband, *if she has* a good report for *her* good works, if she has brought up children, if she has shown hospitality to strangers, if she has washed the saints' feet... [keeping the Passover faithfully] ...if she has given relief to those who were afflicted, if she has devoted *herself* to every good work. But refuse *to put* the younger widows *on the list*, for when sensuous impulses draw them away from Christ, they desire to marry, bringing judgment *upon themselves* because they have set aside *their* first faith" (vs 8-12).

I guess at that point it was if they were young they would pledge to not marry, but help, serve and do all this sort of thing, then the desires of the flesh would get them later on.

Verse 13: "And besides this, they also learn *to be* idle, wandering about from house to house; and *they* not only *become* idle, but *they* also *become* talebearers and busybodies, speaking things *that* ought not *be spoken*. Therefore, I wish the younger women to marry, to bear children, to manage the household, *and* to give no occasion to the adversary to bring a reproach; for some have already turned aside to follow Satan. If any believer, man or woman, has *relatives who are* widows, let him or *her* impart relief to them, and do not let the Church bear the burden in order that it may impart relief to those widows who are truly *alone in the world*" (vs 13-16).

Let's go back and look at a couple of Scriptures that add to this section, about how they have denied the faith:

2-Timothy 2:12: "If we endure, we shall also reign together with *Him*; if we deny *Him*, He will also deny us; if we are unfaithful, He remains faithful—He cannot deny Himself" (vs 12-13).

In other words, the important thing is that our way of life be something that is integral with something that we do, not something that we feel that we are compelled to do, or under obligation. Rather, it should be something that we are willing to do from the heart, because that's what God wants us to do as a *way of life*. Whereas, with a 'religion' you feel compelled, force to.

1-John 2:21: “I did not write to you because you do not know the Truth, but because you know it, and *you understand* that not one lie comes from the Truth. Who is the liar if it is not the one who denies that Jesus is the Christ?...” (vs 22-23). Then it goes one step further. If you don’t take care of your own you become worse than an unbeliever, or an infidel (*KJV*). Then you begin to deny Jesus Christ and begin to be a liar.

“...He is the antichrist—the one who denies the Father and the Son” (v 22). We’ll see exactly how all of these things fall.

Verse 23: “Anyone who denies the Son does not have the Father either” (vs 21-23). That’s where all of this can lead to. Anyone who does not believe that Jesus Christ came in the flesh and is the true Savior of the world is an antichrist.

Are there degrees of antichrist? *Yes!* When you get to the wholesale degree of it, you’re a total Satan-worshiper, which puts you in a far more serious category.

Let’s see what happens when you follow the true faith; let’s see what Jesus said. You need to think on this. That’s why you need to get everything that you do based upon your relationship with God the Father and Jesus Christ, and not based upon:

- a man
- a teacher
- a corporation
- an organization

As I’ve said many times before, and I’ll say again, if I can’t teach you to follow Jesus Christ and God the Father, then I have failed! I don’t want you to follow me, because I am *me*. I want everyone to understand that. But let’s also understand this:

Matthew 10:32: “Now then, whoever shall confess Me before men, that one will I also confess before My Father Who *is* in heaven. But whoever shall deny Me before men, that one will I also deny before My Father, Who *is* in heaven” (vs 32-33). You don’t want that to happen.

Then Jesus shows what’s going to happen because of that, and He shows what the true belief in Christ is going to do. The true belief in Christ is not going to lead to ecumenism and all roads eventually leading to God. *NO!* Here’s what Jesus said:

Verse 34: Do not think that I have come to bring peace on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword.”

(go to the next track)

Verse 35: “For I have come to set a man at

variance against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a man’s enemies *shall be those of his own household*. The one who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; and the one who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And the one who does not take up his cross and follow Me is not worthy of Me” (vs 35-38).

So, all the normal reactions of life—to save the flesh and preserve yourself, because people don’t believe the Truth, don’t believe Christ—you can’t do.

Verse 39: “The one who has found his life shall lose it...” In other words, if you find your life in the comfort of people who agree with you rejecting God, you’re going to lose it.

“...and the one who has lost his life for My sake shall find it. The one who receives you receives Me, and the one who receives Me receives Him Who sent Me” (vs 39-40).

See how strong this is? That’s why Paul wrote that if you don’t take care of your own, you’re worst than an infidel! Let’s see one more way of *denying the faith*, talking about those who are going to be overseers or teachers:

Titus 1:9: “Holding steadfastly to the faithful Word... [God’s Word is faithful] ...according to the teachings of *Jesus Christ*, so that he may be able both to encourage with sound doctrine and to convict those who are gainsayers. For there are many rebellious and vain talkers and deceivers, especially those from *the circumcision party*, whose mouths must be stopped; who are subverting whole households, teaching things which *they ought not*, for the sake of selfish gain” (vs 9-11).

Because of this and because of what Paul instructed Timothy, when the time comes when there are false doctrines out there floating around, then you have to prove that those are wrong, and disprove them from the Bible. In other words, if you can’t really prove it from the Bible, then it’s a false doctrine in degree. There are a lot out there teaching things that they ought not teach.

Verse 12: “One from among them, *even one* of their own prophets, said, ‘Cretans *are* always liars, *and* evil, wild beasts, *and* lazy gluttons.’ This testimony is true. For this reason you *must* rebuke them severely, that they may be sound in the faith; not paying attention to Jewish myths and commandments of men, which turn away from the Truth. To the pure, all things *are* pure; but to those

who are defiled and unbelieving, nothing *is* pure; rather, both their minds and consciences are defiled. They personally profess to know God, but in *their* works they deny Him, being abominable and disobedient, and reprobate unto every good work” (vs 12-16).

That is another way how a person can deny Christ. All of those who are out there who have their own little doctrines, which are purporting to be following Christ—and they are not in the Scriptures—what is happening? *They are actually denying Christ!* They are actually holding Christ to the lies of their own statements, which Christ will never be held to the lies of their statements.

1-Timothy 5:11: “But refuse to *put* the younger widows *on the list*, for when sensuous impulses draw them away from Christ, they desire to marry.”

There is a time when Paul said that marriage is not sin; marriage is ordained of God. There’s a time to marry, and it is not sin.

1-Corinthians 7:25: “Now concerning virgins, I do not have a command from *the* Lord; but I give *my* judgment, as one who has received mercy from *the* Lord to be faithful. Therefore, I think this *judgment* is good because of the present distress: that *it is* good for a man to remain as he is” (vs 25-26)—that is *not to marry*. That’s what Paul is talking about here. How can you raise a family if you have a lot of distress.

Let’s put it this way: Picture yourself when there is war going on, it is not beneficial to marry. If you marry and you happen to bring a baby into the world, you’ve got greater problems. That’s why Paul is saying that “...because of the present distress” to remain like me and not marry.

Verse 27: “Have you been bound to a wife? Do not seek to be loosed. Have you been loosed from a wife? Do not seek a wife. However, **if you have married, you have not sinned...**” (vs 27-28). That’s why in 1-Tim 5 Paul says to ‘let the younger women marry,’ because it is right.

“...and if a virgin has married, she has not sinned. Yet, those *who marry* shall have distress in the flesh... [in the present distress that they were having: wars, famine, bandits, etc.] ...but I *wish* to spare you. Now this I say, brethren: the time *is* drawing close....” (vs 28-29). And at that time Paul thought that it was short.

“...For the *time that* remains, *let* those who have wives be as if they did not have wives; and those who weep, as if they did not weep; and those who rejoice, as if they did not rejoice; and those who

buy, as if they did not possess; and those who use this world, as if they did not use *it* as their own; for this world in its present form is passing away. Now I desire you to be without anxiety. The man who is unmarried is concerned about the things of the Lord—how he may please the Lord. But he who is married has concerns about the things of this world—how he may please *his* wife” (vs 29-33).

That would take more time in the present distress. This is what he’s referring to in the whole thing here. Later on when Paul was writing 1-Tim. he was getting close to the end of his life and he was actually giving the inspired word on how to carry on the Church down through the ages. He didn’t know that it was going to be this long.

Even in the days of Noah it was said that when Methuselah died they were expecting the Messiah. But what came instead of the Messiah? *The Flood!* So, now Paul realizes that it’s going to take more time.

1-Timothy 5:14: “Therefore, I wish the younger women to marry, to bear children, to manage the household, *and* to give no occasion to the adversary to bring a reproach; for some have already turned aside to follow Satan” (vs 14-15). When time went on and the prophecies didn’t fulfill the way that they had anticipated them, then you have to bring things to a more stable way of doing things.

Titus 2:1: “But *as for* you, speak the things that befit **sound doctrine.**” All the way through Timothy and Titus it has to do with *sound doctrine!* True doctrine over and over again.

Verse 2: “*Teach the* older men to be temperate, serious-minded, respectable, sound in the faith, in love, *and* in patience; in like manner, *teach the* older women *to be* in *their* behavior as *it is* fitting for Godly women, not slanderers, *and* not enslaved to much wine, *but* teachers of that which is right; that they may teach the young women *to love their* husbands *and to love their* children; *to be* modest, chaste, keepers of *the* home; *to be* good *and* to submit themselves to their own husbands, so that the Word of God may not be blasphemed” (vs 2-5).

That says an awful lot there when you really analyze each verse, which we’ll do when we get to Titus. What is the foundation for any society? *The family!* The family unit begins with mother and father. That is a created relationship that God has given to where then both are submitting and yielding to God and helping and serving each other in the way that God has ordained, and for the wife to submit herself to her husband as unto the Lord, and for the husband to love his wife as the Lord loves the

Church.

That's what was to be taught, "...so that the Word of God may not be blasphemed" This ties right along with it. If we had that today, just think how much less crime, problems and difficulties we would have today if the world were not structured in such a way that many, many families need to have two people working just to keep the household running. Satan has it devised that way, because he knows that if mothers were home the children would not be getting in as much trouble. If all mothers in all neighborhoods were home and took care of the families, I tell you what, the whole situation with children would be entirely different than what we have today. You talk about how much authority that mothers would wield, that would wield a great amount of authority.

At that point, the children don't like to see mom coming after them with a broom. She would be able to teach them how to live their lives in a proper way.

- you wouldn't be having gangs of kids running around killing and shooting each other
- you wouldn't have 7-year-olds shooting 5-year-olds
- you wouldn't have 10-year-olds raping 6-year-olds
- you wouldn't have drugs in schools, running rampant

Chances are a lot of the mothers are not home when the kids get home, and it doesn't make any difference. So, the kids run out and do whatever they want to do. Then you have the whole school teaching them that they have rights and the parents have no authority over them. I tell you what, when Christ returns that's all going to be changed.

God wants us, in our own lives, to change now and conform to the Word of God! So, all through this, what is Paul upholding?

- the faith
- the family
- the relationship of people within the Church with each other
- the widows
- the fatherless

1-Timothy 5:17: "Let the ordained elders who are leading well..." Not just 'older men' (KJV), because Timothy was an elder who was a younger man. Paul said, 'Don't let anyone despise your youth. Of course, he was leading well, and Paul was giving him the instructions on how to teach the

others to lead well. This has to do with ordained elders.

"...be counted worthy of double honor, especially those who are laboring in *the* Word and doctrine" (v 17). Everything comes back to the Word of God, over and over again. Everything comes back to doctrine—*sound* doctrine, *true* doctrine, *right* doctrine—over and over again.

Verse 18: "For the Scripture says, 'You shall not muzzle an ox treading out *the* corn,' and, 'The workman *is* worthy of his hire.'" That is a very important thing to realize.

1-Corinthians 9:6 "Or I only and Barnabas, do we not have a right to refrain from working?... [Yes, because God gave them that authority.] ...Does anyone at any time serve as a soldier at his own expense?..." (vs 6-7). No! If you're in the military as it is today, what do you do? *They feed you, clothe you, give you weapons, train you, give you a place to sleep, run your life and you have time off!* But none of that is at your own charge. You don't put in any of your own money, any of your own equipment, any of your own clothing.

"...Does anyone plant a vineyard and not eat the fruit of it?..." (v 7). Talking about basic logical things to understand.

"...Or does anyone shepherd a flock and not eat *the* meat and milk from the flock? Am I saying these things *merely* from a human point of view? Or does not the law say the same things? For it is written in the Law of Moses, 'You shall not muzzle the ox that is treading out corn.' Is it because God is concerned for oxen?" (vs 7-9). Of course, God cares for the oxen.

I remember reading an account of a man in India, where they have these starving cattle and they hook them up to a big treadmill with a big stone grinder to grind up the corn, and in his village they were putting a muzzle on the cow or ox so that it wouldn't eat. He read this Scripture and he thought, let's take the muzzle off and we'll feed it. They found out that the production increased so much greater that it was worth it to let the ox eat while it was treading out the corn. To that extent God does care for the oxen.

Here's Paul's interpretation of that Scripture, v 10: "Or does He not certainly say *this* for our sakes? For our sakes it was written, so that the one who plows might plow in hope, and the one who threshes the corn in hope might be partaker of his hope. If we have sown to you spiritual things, *is it* a great thing if we shall reap your physical things? If others participate in this authority over you..." (vs

10-12). Who were those? *False prophets, false ministers!*

“...much more surely *should* not we? Nevertheless, we have not used this authority; but we have endured all things, so that we might not hinder the Gospel of Christ” (v 12). That’s exactly how a lot of people who are new, carnal or in the faith are dealt with. You try and bring them along:

- so that they will understand and grow
- so that **from the heart** they will do the things they need to do
- so that **from the heart** they will give offerings and tithes

Not that they are forced to do it!

Verse 13: “Don’t you know that those who are laboring *in* the sacred things of the temple live *of the things* of the temple, *and* those who are ministering at the altar are partakers with the altar?” What did they have there at the temple and the altar? *Tithes, offerings: peace, meal, sin!*

Verse 14: “In the same way also, **the Lord did command** that those who preach the Gospel are to live of the Gospel.” When Paul is talking in 1-Tim. 5 about those who are laboring in the Word and doctrine are worthy of double compensation, that’s what he’s talking about. He verifies this by bringing up the same starting position that he used in 1-Cor. 9 by saying:

1-Timothy 5:18: “For the Scripture says, ‘You shall not muzzle an ox treading out the corn,’ and, ‘The workman *is* worthy of his hire.’ Do not receive an accusation against an elder, except on *the testimony* of two or three witnesses. Those *elders* who sin *should be* corrected in the presence of all in order that the others also may fear” (vs 18-20).

Verse 1: “Do not sharply rebuke an older man...” So, you would have a contradiction here—wouldn’t you? If the older man in v 1 were an elder, or if the elder in v 20 was an older man, then you would be rebuking and correcting him. Do you understand where that would be a conflict? If both of these were translated *older men* then you would have a conflict, because one command would be not to rebuke them, and the other would be to correct them openly before all. That’s why in v 1 Paul says to “...not sharply rebuke an older man, but exhort *him* as a father...”

- Why should elders be corrected publicly for serious offenses? *Because they are serving publicly!*
- What effect does this have?

1. the elder is going to be more circumspect

in his behavior

2. this is going to let all the brethren know that the elders are subject to the same correction as the brethren

When you don’t have that, then you have great problems develop. Then you have the law for the rulers, and a different law for the ruled. You have the elite who can do anything, and you have the common people who can’t get away with anything. We’ve also lived through that in the Church. Don’t you think if some of those serious problems were corrected publicly and admitted to, confessed and repented of, that the whole Church would be in a far different condition today than it is now, if that were done when it should have been done?

Verse 20: “Those *elders* who sin *should be* corrected in the presence of all in order that the others also may fear. I charge you before God and *the* Lord Jesus Christ and the elect angels, that you observe these things without prejudice, *and let* nothing be done by partiality” (vs 20-21). There is to be *no politics* whatsoever. *No favoritisms* whatsoever. This gets back to *judging righteous judgment*.

### **Correction:**

Let’s talk about the degrees of correction. Who is responsible for correcting you on the first cause? On the first order?

The ministry used to take upon itself to correct the Church all the time, and individuals in particular. They never taught the people the correct way to do it. Here is the correct way to receive correction:

1-Corinthians 11:31: “Now, if we would **examine** [judge] **ourselves**... [to correct] ...we would not be judged. But when we are judged, we are chastened by *the* Lord, so that we will not be condemned with the world” (vs 31-32). How do you avoid the correction of God? In His severity? *You’re never going to avoid the correction of God, because if you’re judging yourself you judge yourself by the Word of God!* That the measure and standard by which you judge yourself.

What happens when you find yourself falling short? *What you do, you make corrections!* You repent to God and have Him wipe away the sin. You make the correction and adjustment in your life, and that is the easiest and quickest and simplest way of correction.

Also, it is the kind of correction that does not expose your problem publicly. That’s the kind that God wants, because *love covers a multitude of*

*sin!* If you're loving God and the Word of God, and you're letting the Word of God correct you, guide you and lead you, then God is going to cover a multitude of those sins, because you're constantly correcting yourself, and you're constantly adjusting your behavior to make it right. How do you let this correction and judgment take place?

1. *By the Spirit of God!* God's Spirit, if it's leading you, is going to reveal that you are doing wrong! When that comes along, then yield to the Spirit of God, which is showing that you're doing wrong.
2. *By the Word of God!* We just read that in 2-Tim. 3, that the Word of God is profitable for correction.

If you let the Word of God correct you, as you study—that's why it's so important to study—and you let the Spirit of God lead you in the study, let the Spirit of God correct you as you're going along, then you're going to find that:

- God is going to intervene in your life
- He's going to lead you because He loves you
- He's going to cover your sins because He loves you

And if you confess your sins to Him, He is faithful and just to forgive your sins! 1-John 1 shows how we overcome the deceitfulness of human nature

1-John 1:6: "If we proclaim that we have fellowship with Him, but we are walking in the darkness, we are lying to ourselves, and we are not practicing the Truth. However, if we walk in the Light, as He is in the Light, *then* we have fellowship with one another, and **the blood of Jesus Christ, His own Son, cleanses us from all sin**" (vs 6-7). That's how the correction will come, directly from God the Father and Jesus Christ, covered with the blood of Christ.

Verse 8: "If we say that we do not have sin, we are deceiving ourselves, and the Truth is not in us." What happens then? *You're not letting God's Spirit lead you! You're not letting God's Spirit correct you!* Then you're headed for correction where God has to do something in a very profound way, or public way, like He did with David. Remember the account of David; you can tie that right in there. If David would have corrected himself when he first saw Bathsheba and asked his servant to go over to ask her to not bathe on the roof when he was out there, that would have ended the problem!

No, David sent his servant over to bring her back over. One thing led to another, and he didn't yield to the Spirit and Word of God, and the

correction of God, so God had to do it publicly. He was deceiving himself in the whole thing.

Verse 9: "If we confess our own sins... [to Christ] ...He is faithful and righteous, to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness." That's how you have the continuous, day-to-day correction that goes on. Are we not, in our daily outline prayer, to forgive us our sins as we forgive others? That is to keep us constantly cleansed before God; constantly in a state of being led by the Spirit of God. That's the easiest way to take it.

The next most difficult way is to have the whole process of Matt. 18: go to your brother one on one. If that doesn't work then you take one or two witnesses and go with that. If that doesn't work then you tell it to the whole church. If that doesn't work then he's out.

You also have the situation that in doing those things, don't do them with a carnal attitude or carnal spirit to *get* somebody! Sometimes it may take a little longer for some people to understand certain things. So, you have to give a little rope and a little latitude, and that way you have patience, endurance and you don't come and crush people for the least little thing.

Sometimes if you don't jump in and try and correct it immediately, but just let things go a little bit, what happens? *You do that so that the other person will be willing to correct him or her self first!* Maybe that will happen and then you don't have to do anything.

Before you get into a Matt. 18, you need to spend a lot of time in prayer about it. Ask God to work with the individual and do the correcting with His Holy Spirit within the mind of the individual.

Then you don't have to go through the whole process, because when you go through the whole process it leaves some rough edges. It takes some time to overcome it. It works, but that's just all part of it. If God has to intervene...

Let's see what Jeremiah says concerning correction, Jeremiah 10:23: "O LORD, I know that the way of man is not in himself; *it is* not in man who walks to direct his steps." Without the Word of God, without the Spirit of God—just a carnal human being—you have no way of correcting yourself, to know which is the right way to go. You go the way of the desires of the flesh. And we know what's in the heart of men:

Mark 7:21: "For from within, out of the hearts of men, go forth evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness,

wickednesses, guile, licentiousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness; all these evils go forth from within, and *these* defile a man” (vs 21-23). It’s not within man; it’s not natural to do what I’m saying here.

But it is if you have the Spirit of God, because that’s what the Spirit of God will help you to do. Then it becomes natural and it is really led by the Spirit of God, and it’s only natural because of the Spirit and Word of God.

Jeremiah 10:24: “O LORD, correct me...” When you go to God and ask Him to correct you, be very careful how you do it.”

“...but with judgment... [and that implies mercy, kindness and understanding] ...not in Your anger, lest You bring me to nothing” (v 24). That’s what almost happened to Job.

You don’t want to fall into either of those categories. That’s why it’s better to let your heart be tender before God:

- always have a tender heart to God
- don’t let anyone make it cynical or anything like that
- have a tender heart to God
- have patience toward each other
- have love toward each other
- ask God to intervene and do the correcting so it doesn’t have to become a public affair

This is how I try and do things in my ministry. That’s why you will never hear me give a correcting sermon. If you can’t be corrected by the Word of God and the Spirit of God, then my correction may turn you around for a little bit, but if there’s no real repentance and change it’s not going to work.

As I’ve said before, years ago—I remember this in 1965-66—we were instructed to always give an attack sermon on every sin in the congregation, and I did that, and alienated the two churches. It took me a whole year to win them back, and then that was too ‘lovey-dovey.’ That kind of way of administering correction... If it has to be, then it has to be! But that’s not the desirous thing to do.

2-Corinthians 12:20—Paul was saying: “But I fear that when I come, perhaps I may find you *in a state* such as I do not wish... [self-correcting] ...and I may be found by you such as you do not wish... [You don’t desire for me to come with a big stick—do you?] ...that *there may be* strifes, jealousies, indignations, contentions, evil speakings, whisperings, puffing up, commotions; *and* that when I come again, my God will humble me among you,

and I shall grieve over many of those who have already sinned, and have not repented of the uncleanness and sexual immorality and licentiousness that they have practiced” (vs 20-21).

Paul was giving them warning in writing. He didn’t want to come and go through all the agony. So, he was being strong in it; ‘Look get yourself strong enough before I come.’

2-Corinthians 13:1: “This *is the* third time *that* I am coming to you. In *the* mouth of two or three witnesses every matter shall be established. I have previously told *you*, and I am telling you in advance the second time, as though I were present; but since I am absent now, I am writing to those who have continued to sin until now—and to all the rest—that if I come again, I will not spare” (vs 1-2).

If the Church just gets totally carnal like it was in Corinth, sometimes you have to come with the ‘sword of the Lord,’ and with the fury of God’s Spirit, lest God take it in hand and *He* correct it Himself! That’s the whole sum of it.

Verse 3: “Since you seek a proof of Christ speaking through me (Who is not weak toward you, but is powerful in you; For although He was crucified in weakness, yet, He lives by God’s power; and we are indeed weak in Him, but we shall live with Him by God’s power toward you), **examine yourselves to see whether you are in the faith...** [you’ve got to determine that yourself] ...prove your own selves...” (vs 3-5). **You do:**

- the examining
- the judging
- the soul-searching
- the repenting
- the comparison with the Word of God on how you’re living

“...Don’t you *of* your own selves know that Jesus Christ is in you? Otherwise, you are reprobates.... [those are pretty strong words; Paul is warning them] ...But I hope that you will recognize that we are not reprobates.” (vs 5-6). In other words, even though you may be, you better understand that we’re not.

Verse 7: “Now, I am praying to God *that* you do no evil; not that we may appear *to be* approved, but that you may do what *is* right, even if we are *regarded* as reprobates. For we do not have any power against the Truth, but *only* for the Truth” (vs 7-8). That’s a profound statement! Even if you sin, you’re not against the Truth, but you are proving the Truth! Why? *The wages of sin is death!*

If you do righteousness, what are you doing? *You are proving the Truth, because that’s the*

*behavior we need to have!* That's what Paul is saying through all of this correction. I expanded it just little bit more to help you understand how God wants the Church corrected:

- *you* correct yourself before God
- *you* use the Word of God
- *you* use the Spirit of God

If each one will do that, then we don't have to come to the point where the Apostle Paul did with those in Corinth where he actually said, 'How do you want me to come, with a big stick or humbly?' We don't know what happened, because there's no 3<sup>rd</sup> Corinthians; we don't know what occurred. It leaves you in suspended animation—doesn't it?

1-Timothy 5:22: "Do not be quick to lay hands on any man..." Boy o boy did we suffer from that when we were in Biblical Church of God.

"...neither take part in *the* sins of others..." (v 22). That's what happens when you lay hands on someone quickly. That's why the recent ordination we did wasn't quickly, it was after 14 years.

Verse 23: "No longer drink *only* water, but use a little wine for your stomach's sake and your frequent infirmities.... [here's something very important]: ...Some men's sins are open to public view, going before to judgment..." (vs 23-24)—always out there; always making a mistake; an impetuous one getting right in the middle of it.

"...and some men's *sins* follow after" (v 25). These are the smoothies; this follows along on why you should not lay hands on anyone quickly.

Verse 25: "In a similar manner also, the good works of *some* are openly seen; and those that are otherwise cannot be hidden."

If you're doing things to please God, and God is going to use any particular man as a teacher or an elder, don't worry about it, don't put yourself forward in a carnal way. ***God knows it, and He'll bring the fruits forward. The brethren will know it, and then the event will take place according to the will of God!***

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) 1 Timothy 4:6-10
- 2) 1 Timothy 1:3-5, 4-7, 18-20
- 3) 1 Timothy 3:14-15
- 4) 1 Timothy 5:7, 21
- 5) 1 Timothy 6:2, 13, 20
- 6) 2 Timothy 3:15-17
- 7) 2 Timothy 4:1-4
- 8) 1 Timothy 5:1-7
- 9) Leviticus 19:32, 11-18
- 10) Deuteronomy 10:17-20
- 11) Deuteronomy 24:17-18
- 12) Exodus 22:22-24
- 13) Matthew 23:13
- 14) Luke 20:45-47
- 15) Luke 21:1-4
- 16) Acts 6:1
- 17) James 1:27, 1, 26-27
- 18) 1 Timothy 5:8-16
- 19) 2 Timothy 2:12-13
- 20) 1 John 2:21-23
- 21) Matthew 10:32-40
- 22) Titus 1:9-16
- 23) 1 Timothy 5:11
- 24) 1 Corinthians 7:25-35
- 25) 1 Timothy 5:14-15
- 26) Titus 2:1-5
- 27) 1 Timothy 5:17-18
- 28) 1 Corinthians 9:6-14
- 29) 1 Timothy 5:18-20, 1, 20-21
- 30) 1 Corinthians 11:31-32
- 31) 1 John 1:6-9
- 32) Jeremiah 10:23
- 33) Mark 7:21-23
- 34) Jeremiah 10:24
- 35) 2 Corinthians 12:20-21
- 36) 2 Corinthians 13:1-8
- 37) 1 Timothy 5:22-25

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- James 3:1
- Revelation 19
- Matthew 18

#### Also referenced:

#### Sermon Series:

- *Judge Righteous Judgment*
- *Why God Hates Religion*
- *Epistle of James*

FRC:bo  
Transcribed: 2-23-15

## Pastoral Epistles VI Doing the Will of God

(1-Timothy 6)  
Fred R. Coulter

1-Timothy 6:1: “Let as many slaves as are under the yoke of *servitude* esteem their own masters worthy of all respect, so that the name of God and *His* doctrine be not blasphemed. Do not let those who have believing masters despise *them* because they are brethren; rather, let them serve *them even better*, because they are believing and beloved who are being helped by the good service. These things teach and exhort” (vs 1-2).

We have the situation today that most of us are employees or we have our own business, and this whole idea of bought and own slaves is really kind of foreign to us. So, with the environment that we are working in it really is kind of difficult for us to contemplate or understand the problems that would be with slaves.

Since many of us are slaves today. It also applies if you are working for someone. I’ll tell you what, if you work for someone who has an attitude of love and service and respect, they will watch over you better, they will take care of you better, and when the crunch time comes to cut down on the workforce, you might have a better chance of saying. This is absolutely true in any relationship.

If God requires this in the relationship between a purchased slave, who is owned by the one who bought him, to “...esteem their own masters worthy of all respect, so that the name of God and *His* doctrine be not blasphemed” (v 1), that really gives us something to think about, taking that principle and applying it to many other things.

Verse 2: “Do not let those who have believing masters despise *them* because they are brethren... [here we’re right down into the inner-personal relationship between slave and master] ...rather, let them serve *them even better*...” [that’s the sense of the Greek; let them serve with even more consideration] ...because they are believing and beloved who are being helped by the good service....”

Eph. 6 gives essentially the same kind of exhortation concerning slaves. That’s quite an unusual situation. We need to understand that today we don’t have slaves, but we have where there are very oppressing employers, and there have even been songs written about taking ‘this job’ and doing something with it. It really takes away from the kind of relationship we ought to have.

You know that if you’re a boss or have your own business and you have an employee who has a good attitude and willing and always there, helpful and kind, and goes above and beyond, you’re going to treat that employee a whole lot better than someone who has to be told every little thing to do, every little dot and tittle must be explained to them; especially if you have someone who all they do is grip and complain. Then when they’re gone all you do is complain about them, talk about them, despise them, gossip about them. That’s maybe why the boss is mean and cruel. It works both ways, because the attitudes work both ways. *Paul is talking to both here.*

Ephesians 6:5: “Servants, obey *your* masters according to *the* flesh...” They owned the slaves. We don’t have any relationship today in America that is that way.

Remember the Centurion who came to Jesus and said, ‘Good Master, You don’t have to come down to my house, just give the word and my daughter will be healed. I am a Centurion and I have those under me and I tell this servant to do this, and he does it; another servant come here, and he comes here. I have these men under my authority. Now, just give the word, and she’ll be healed.’

What did Jesus say to him? *I have never found such great faith, even in all of Israel! Why? Because Israelites like to talk back!* That’s why! It’s part of the nature of Israelites. That doesn’t mean that other people don’t talk back, but that was the kind of faith that he was commended for.

Here the same thing follows, that you be obedient “...with reverence and trembling, in singleness of heart, as unto Christ” (v 5). Is that not the same kind of relationship that was required of the wife to the husband? and husband to the wife? *Yes, indeed!* Here we have the same kind of relationship.

Verse 6: “Not *merely* with eye service, as *do* pleasers of men...” You just don’t do all the things that are out front so that you can be seen. There are a lot of things that need to be done that are never out front. What were some of the things that they had to do, which were never out front? *I don’t think they had running plumbing like we have today!* I don’t know if you’ve ever worked on a ‘honey-bucket’ brigade. I didn’t understand that until I went to

Korea. A ‘honey-bucket’ brigade was a man who goes around and his job is to pick up all of the human excrement and put it into his wagon and take it out... and the worst thing they do with it is to use it for fertilizer in their rice paddies. That’s why you don’t ever want to eat rice in Korea, or that is Korean grown. The stench is unreal!

When I arrived in Korea as a private in the winter of 1954, it was 20<sup>0</sup> below zero, you could still smell the stench of these ‘honey buckets’ and the ‘honey-bucket’ man. When spring came and all of it thawed out...

Then I found out that they made a dish called ‘go hong’—squid that has been shipped inland from the ocean. Well, it’s not refrigerated, and by the time it gets inland it stinks to high heaven! The Koreans would cook this with just tons of garlic, so you could smell them coming a hundred feet away! Here’s all this rotten fish and all of this garlic just kind of oozing out. Kind of like the cartoon with ‘Joe Dipstick’; he’s got this big cloud of rain over him and when they would eat that this big cloud of stench just followed them along. That was something!

Even if you have those unpleasant tasks to do, you should do them with singleness of heart, not with eye-service.

“...but as servants of Christ, **doing the will of God from the heart**” (v 2). That really changes everything; everything that you do, even if you’re working for a boss, even a harsh taskmaster, still in serving him with a willing heart and attitude is the will of God.

Labor unions will not like to hear that! But I tell you what, if more employees had that attitude there would be no need for labor unions. The employers would take care of the employees, because they would not want to loose such a valuable employee who was willing, worked hard, did good work, served his employer, loyal and faithful to him. **But the motivation is that:**

- you are doing this to God
- you are doing this because God is judging you

not just to please men! That’s quite an important thing that we are doing.

Verse 7: “Do service with goodwill... [with the right attitude] ...*as* to the Lord, and not to men.” That really changes the whole perspective—doesn’t it?

Verse 8: “Knowing that whatever good each one has done, this shall he receive from the Lord, whether bond or free. And masters, do the same

things toward them, forbearing threatening; knowing also that your own Master is in heaven, and there is no respect of persons with Him” (vs 8-9).

So, you see that all of this is to try and create the kind of relationship that God wants to have in His Church; that He wants us to have with each other whether it be a slave/master, rich/poor, male/female.

Let’s understand that in our relationship to each other and in an opportunity for salvation this is how Christ looks at us: We’re still men and women, we’re still husbands and wives, we’re still different kinds of people in the flesh. But if we are working toward growing in the love and Spirit of God, then we need to work toward growing to this kind of situation as Paul explains:

Galatians 3:26: “Because **you are all sons of God...**” That’s also important to remember, because the children of God puts you into a special relationship with God the Father and Jesus Christ.

There are still some people who figure that ‘we need a religion.’ When I get done explaining that you don’t need a ‘religion’ you better graduate from ‘religion’ to *relationship*. Then you will understand more about the Word of God.

“...through faith in Christ Jesus. For as many *of you* as were baptized into Christ did put on Christ. There is neither Jew nor Greek; there is neither bond nor free; there is neither male nor female; for **you are all one in Christ Jesus**” (vs 26-28)—for your standing before God for salvation.

Physically we are still what we are, and there are certain things required of us by God because of that. But this is showing the whole attitude that we need to have.

Paul talks about slaves, freedom, a situation that a person may have been in:

1-Corinthians 7:20: “Let each one abide in the calling in which he was called. Were you called *as* a **slave** [servant]?... [‘doulos’ is the Greek] ...Don’t let yourself fret. But if you are able to become free, by all means do so” (vs 20-21). Use it; go ahead and use it if you can be made free. But if you can’t be made free, don’t get all anxious, concerned and frustrated about it.

Verse 22: “For he who has been called in *the* Lord, *though he be* a slave, is a free man in *the* Lord. In the same way also, he who has been called as a free man is a slave [servant] of Christ; *for* you were bought with a price. Do not become slaves of man. Brethren, in whatever *state* each one was called, let him remain in that with God” (vs 22-24). In this case

Paul was showing that if you can get free from being a slave, that's fine. But if you can't, don't be too concerned about it, *because you're a free man before Christ!*

What is really the worst form of slavery? And can even affect free men? *To be locked into a corporation is not the worst slavery! The worst slavery is slavery to your sins!*

John 8:31: "Therefore, Jesus said to the Jews who had believed in Him..." There were various levels of degree of those who believed in Jesus, just like there is today. There are people who believe in Jesus at a very low level, and that's what these were.

"...If you continue in My Word, you are truly My disciples. And you shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall set you free.' They answered Him, 'We are Abraham's seed, and have never been in bondage to anyone. What do You mean by saying, "You shall become free"?' (vs 31-33).

The truth is, they were in bondage to the Roman Empire, so they didn't even understand their own situation. What were they looking to? *To a physical thing to ensure their freedom, looking to Abraham, not understanding their own involvement, their own responsibility in their own lives!*

Verse 34: "Jesus answered them, 'Truly, truly I say to you, **everyone who practices sin is a servant of sin.**'" *That is the worst slavery!*

You can have free men everywhere, but if you're all enslaved to your sins, then you are in bondage, indeed! I think that's where we see a lot of people today.

1-Timothy 6:2: "These things teach and exhort." This can be a summary of everything up to this point, or it can also be an introduction to v 3; either way you take it, it applies.

Verses 3-5 are very important. This is one of the verses I showed as to why I had to resign from the Worldwide Church of God in 1979.

Verse 3: "**If anyone teaches any different doctrine, and does not adhere to sound words, even those of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the doctrine that is according to Godliness, he is proud and knows nothing.** Rather, he has a morbid attraction to questions and disputes over words, from which come envy, arguments, blasphemy, wicked suspicions, vain reasonings of men who have been corrupted in *their* minds and *are* destitute of the Truth—*men* who believe that gain is Godliness. **From such withdraw yourself**" (vs 3-5).

That is a very clear statement! We also need to understand that the words of Christ are very

powerful. If you break this down there are ten major things:

1. is arrogant
  2. knows nothing
  3. morbid attraction to questions
  4. disputes over words
- from which comes*
5. envy
  6. arguments
  7. blaspheme
  8. wicked suspicions
  9. vain reasonings
  10. men who believe that gain is Godliness

All of these things, sooner or later, enter into a church that is not adhering to the words of Christ. When they do, if they cannot be corrected from within, then what has to happen is *you have to separate!* That's just the way that it is.

If you have conscience before God, and if you are going to do the Truth, then you will have to separate. There is really no other way of preserving the Truth, when you come to understand it. *If you begin politically compromising with people—compromising the Word of God, compromising what you believe—you are taking the road down the path to leaving God!*

I've got a report in front of me *The Ecumenical Movement for Unity* in which another man wrote that the ecumenical movement is the great apostasy taking place. The ecumenical movement is this: *service unites, but doctrine divides!* The first thing that someone will do, and especially if he has been a minister in the Church of God, is come around and say that 'this doctrine doesn't matter, this doctrine doesn't matter and this doctrine doesn't matter; let's just get along and go along.' You're headed down the ecumenical path and down away that is heading away from God. Here's what Jesus said:

Matthew 10:34: "Do not think that I have come to bring peace on the earth; I did not come to bring peace, but a sword." What is the sword of God? The two-edged sword is *the Word of God!*

Hebrew 4:12 "For the Word of God *is* living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of both soul and spirit, *and* of both *the* joints and *the* marrow, and *is* able to discern *the* thoughts and intents of *the* heart."

God is not offering a better way of life in the flesh. God is offering eternal life, which is going to cost your physical life; one way or the other.

Matthew 10:35: "For I have come to set a

man at variance against his father, and a daughter against her mother, and a daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a man's enemies *shall be those of his own household*. The one who loves father or mother more than Me is not worthy of Me; and the one who loves son or daughter more than Me is not worthy of Me. And the one who does not take up his cross and follow Me is not worthy of Me. The one who has found his life shall lose it; and the one who has lost his life for My sake shall find it" (vs 35-39).

These are the sound doctrines and words of faith that are of Jesus Christ. We need to understand that! We need to realize that! Look back and you will see what happened with our church experience when they began amalgamating 'religious' ideas from other 'religions' into the Truth of God!

Where is the Church of God today? *It's under the judgment of God!* And has been for a long time, because those things were done. One of the main reasons I resigned was because you cannot preach a Gospel of 'get and give' to world leaders and say you're preaching the Gospel of Christ. That is not true! You cannot ordain men who are dedicated to evil to be top leaders in the Church. Since that could not be corrected within, it had to be *withdraw yourself from such*—that's exactly the command of Christ. There's no other way about it.

Let's look at this concerning doctrine. Doctrine is very important for us to grasp and understand. Doctrine means *teaching*. How important is doctrine? *So important that it is more important than good intentions!* You can have a good intention you think is good for yourself that in your own mind is good and well-intentioned. But if it's not based on doctrine—the Word of God, the Truth of God, the commandments of God, the laws of God—it is meaningless. You may borrow some of it, and mix a little of your own ideas in it, but always remember that the Bible says, 'A little leaven leavens the whole lump,' and your ideas is that leaven, which then is going to leaven the whole lump.

Jesus says, Matthew 7:21: "Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven, but the one who is doing the will of My Father, Who *is* in heaven." The basic doctrine in the Bible is ***obey My voice and do the will of God!*** If you're not doing the will of the Father, it doesn't matter if you're sweet or religious, none of those things count! ***You have to be doing the will of the Father!***

Verse 22: "Many will say to Me in that day..." We need to take a whole other view of these things. There will be a lot of people who say, 'Lord,

I had 500,000 in my church.' The pope is going to stand up and say, 'Lord, I was Your vicar, and we had billions.'

"...in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy through Your name? And *did we not* cast out demons through Your name?... [that's pretty powerful work] ...And *did we not* perform many works of power through Your name?' And then I will confess to them, '***I never knew you....***'" (vs 22-23). 'We are to know that we know the Lord, because we keep His commandments' (1-John); we know Him by the Spirit that He has given to us.

{Note sermon series on the *Epistles of John*; also see book *The Seven General Epistles*} look up all the things that we are to know, which is taught in the Epistle of First John. If you know those things then you know Christ.}

"**...Depart from Me, you who work lawlessness**" (v 23). If they're doing good things in casting out demons, how are they working iniquity?

- by violating the Sabbath
- by violating the Holy Days
- by embracing pagan philosophies, doctrines, practices and observances

That is all iniquity! But on the surface you can have all this goody-goody-two-shoe stuff. Then Jesus makes a point:

Verse 24: "Therefore, everyone who hears these words of Mine..." Let's understand that it just doesn't rely upon a certain thing.

- any saying of Jesus Christ is doctrine, *because it's Truth and it's teaching*
- any word of Jesus Christ is doctrine, *because it's Truth and teaching*
- any word of the Bible is doctrine, *because it's Truth and teaching*

"...and practices them, I will compare him to a wise man, who built his house upon the rock" (v 24)—and, of course, He's referring to Himself there as the Rock. Everything is to be built upon the Rock of Christ.

Verse 25: "And the rain came down, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house..."—which means that if you are a Christian you are going to have a lot of problems.

Not like the Christianity of the world and be free of problems. The Christianity of this world preaches that you will be free of problems. I'm sure that Satan gives them a lot of peace. That's why we have a lot of difficulties. The biggest difficulty is *holding to the Truth!*

"...but it did not fall, for it was founded

upon the rock. And everyone who hears these words of Mine and does not practice them shall be compared to a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand; and the rain came down, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell, and great was the fall of it” (vs 25-27).

Let’s understand that those in the world are going to have problems. It’s going to come a little differently for them than it does for us. Sometimes, because of the troubles and difficulties that we have, we look and compare ourselves with other people in the world who *appear* not to be having difficulties and problems. But we really don’t know what they are going through. Some of them may not have problems like we do, but some of them may have greater problems than we do; we just don’t know.

Sometimes we get like the man—Asaph—Psalm 73:1 “Truly God is good to Israel, even to those who are pure of heart.” He’s referring to himself. He’s starting out making a statement, but what follows was that he didn’t have a clean heart.

Verse 2: “But as for me, my feet had almost stumbled; my steps had nearly slipped, for I was envious at the arrogant when I saw the prosperity of the wicked” (vs 2-3). Isn’t that true? Don’t those who are really the followers of Christ sometimes have to go through a lot of depravation? *Yes, they do!*

Verse 4: “For there are no pangs in their death... [they just live to a ripe old age, die and everything is wonderful for them] ...and their strength is firm. They are not in trouble like other men; neither are they plagued like *other men*” (v 4-5)—namely me, because

Asaph was thinking of himself. That is true. Whenever you get to just thinking on yourself, how bad it is for you, you think that no one else in the world has one problem; just yourself, ‘little ole me, and the world is hanging over my head.’ “...neither are they plagued like *other men*.”

Verse 6: “Therefore, pride is as a chain about their neck....” Reminds me of our President, very prideful and arrogant. One day he is going to have to face it, and it’s not going to be just the judgment of the Congress. ***It will be the judgment of God!***

“...Violence covers them like a garment. Their eyes stand out with fatness; they have more than the heart could wish for” (vs 6-7). And ‘here I am, I don’t have hardly anything.’ That’s the thought that comes behind that.

Verse 8: “They scoff and speak with malice; in their arrogance they threaten oppression.

They set their mouth against the heavens, and their tongue walks through the earth. Therefore, waters of abundance are drunk by them. And they say, ‘How does God know? And is there knowledge in the Most High?’” (vs 8-11). That is in heaven above. Is heaven even concerned about this.

Verse 12: “**Behold, these are the wicked, who prosper in the world;** they increase in riches. Surely I have made my heart pure in vain and washed my hands in innocence” (vs 12-13). Look at me, I’m doing all this stuff.

Verse 14: “For all the day long I have been plagued and chastened every morning. If I say, ‘I will speak thus’; behold, I would have betrayed the generation of Your children. When I thought to understand this, it was too painful for me” (vs 14-16). Your mind is splitting with frustration as to why such evil should go on, and I am consumed with all of these difficulties and problems. Jesus said, ‘The rains came, the wind blew and the floods beat upon it.’

Verse 17: “**Until I went into the sanctuary of God; then I understood their end.**” When you accuse God of things, of all the problems that you’re going through, and really don’t go to God in the way that you should, you’re not going to understand it. You’ll never have a clue. So, you go to the sanctuary of God.

How do you go to the sanctuary of God today? *You go on your knees in your quiet private place and you pray to God!* You have access directly into the sanctuary of God, to God the Father in heaven above, with Jesus Christ at the right hand. If you have some of these difficulties, pray for understanding, pray for wisdom, God can help you.

Verse 18: “Surely You set them in slippery places; You cast them down into destruction.” Think about Pharaoh in Egypt. Did not God let Pharaoh rise really high and become the most powerful man in the world? have riches, wealth and servants? and be head of the ‘religion’ of Egypt? have all the magicians at his command? Have all of these slaves at his command that he could build these treasure cities? *Nothing could touch him!*

Well, God turned that all around! All you have to do is read the first eleven chapters of the book of Exodus and you’ll find out what happened to Pharaoh.

Verse 19: “How have they been brought into desolation, as in a moment! They are utterly consumed with terrors”—because they don’t know God.

If you have troubles, you go to God. If they

have troubles, they don't know where to go; they are fearful.

Verse 20: "Like a dream when one awakens; so, O LORD, when You awake, You shall despise their image, for thus my heart was grieved and I was pricked in my reins. So foolish was I, and ignorant; I was like a beast before You" (vs 20-22). Quite an attitude! He's complaining to God. He really turned his heart to God and repented; so this is also repentance, no doubt about it:

Verse 23: "Nevertheless, I am always with You; You have held me by my right hand. You shall guide me with Your counsel, and afterward receive me to glory. Whom have I in heaven but You? And besides You I desire none upon earth. My flesh and my heart fail, but God is the rock of my heart and my portion forever, for lo, those who are far from You shall perish; You have destroyed all who go a whoring from You" (vs 23-27). That's a key; remember 'from such withdraw yourselves' if they don't adhere to the wholesome, sound words of Christ.

Verse 28: "And me, it is good for me to **draw near to God...**" That's what needs to be. The long and short of it is, if you have the attitude of the first part of this Psalm, you need to draw close to God, because you're far from God, and you're comparing yourselves among yourselves, with other people, and comparing yourself with things that God doesn't want you to compare yourself to. You need to compare yourself to your standing with God and Jesus Christ.

"...I have made the LORD God my refuge, that I may declare all Your works" (v 28). There it is! That's quite something!

Now, we're talking about doctrines. 'If anyone teaches a different doctrine, and does not adhere to the sound words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the doctrine that is according to Godliness.' That's what we're comparing right now.

John 7:16: "Jesus answered them and said, 'My doctrine is not Mine, but His Who sent Me.... [tie this in with Matt. 7] ...If anyone desires to do [practices] His will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it is from God, or *whether* I speak from My own self'" (vs 16-17).

If Jesus didn't speak any other doctrine but what He was taught of God the Father, *who are we* to add to the Word of God? *Stop and think about that!* Stop and think about the seriousness of people adding their own ideas and different 'religious' ideas and 'religions' to the Word of God and teaching that.

That's very serious! Jesus set the example that he didn't speak of Himself. That means *out from within My own self, My own human nature, I am not originating anything!* That's what He's saying.

Verse 18: "The one who speaks of himself..." That's what all the ecumenical movement is, all of these private teachings and doctrines; and there are a jillion different doctrines concerning so many different things, I don't even have time to mention them. I know of at least three Elijahs and ten Ezekiel watchmen on the wall, all with varying and strange doctrines.

"...is seeking his own glory..." (v 18). In other words, he who is speaking from himself. BING! This is an idea, this sounds good.

"...but He Who seeks the glory of Him Who sent Him is true..." (v 18). Jesus is saying that He is seeking the glory of God the Father 'Who sent Me.'

"...and **there is no unrighteousness in Him**" (v 18). In order to understand the glory of God you have to *practice* it. That you do!

Titus 1:9: "Holding steadfastly to the faithful Word, according to the teachings [doctrine] of Jesus Christ, so that he may be able both to encourage with sound doctrine and to convict those who are gainsayers." It's very important for us to know and realize and really keep these things in mind.

Doctrine is very important for us to hold onto, brethren. It's not just a strict teaching or dogma of men.

Romans 16:17: "Now I exhort you, brethren, to take note... [pay attention to and understand who they are] ...of those who are causing divisions and offenses contrary to the doctrine which you have learned, and shun them." What happens? *Sooner or later, you begin mixing doctrine!*

Verse 18: "Because these are the sort who are not serving our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own bellies..."

(go to the next track)

They're preaching from their own selves and seeking their own glory.

"...and are deceiving the hearts of the innocent by smooth talking and flattery" (v 18). That's what happens. That's why everyone is to learn and know the Word of God and have it in their heart and mind so that they won't be taken in by any of these things.

I was really amazed and it struck me, when I

was reading the introduction in Romans that Tyndale wrote, he said, ‘Everyone ought to learn the book of Romans by rote. That’s a tall thing to do, but back then they didn’t have radio, television, CDs and all of these things. When they would get done working, they would come home and if they had a Bible there, and they studied it, they could learn it.

But I tell you what, that really just has stuck in my mind how important it is. That is really true of all the Word of God. You go down through and when James Fox wrote about the Waldensians and their martyrdoms. There were some who only had the book of John, and they had memorized the whole book of John. That sort of makes my brain go a little limp. I’m happy that I can remember as much as I do.

Exodus 24:3: “And Moses came and told the people **all** the words of the LORD, and **all** the judgments. And **all** the people answered with one voice and said, ‘**All the words which the LORD has said, we will do.**’ And Moses wrote **all** the words of the LORD, and rose up early in the morning, and built an altar at the base of the mountain and twelve pillars according to the twelve tribes of Israel” (vs 3-4). Then they had the offerings.

Verse 6: “And Moses took half of the blood, and put *it* in basins, and half of the blood he sprinkled on the altar. And he took the Book of the Covenant, and read in the ears of the people. And they said, ‘**All that the LORD has said we will do, and be obedient.**’” (vs 6-7). That was the finalization of the marriage covenant between Israel and the Lord.

Verse 8: “And Moses took the blood and sprinkled *it* on the people, and said, ‘Behold the blood of the covenant, which the LORD has made with you concerning **all** these words.’” When there is a covenant, God writes it down so there is no doubt.

The blood of the covenant with Christ is us. That’s why we are not to have the inner-mixing of personal teachings or religions of the world with the Truth of God, because you would be breaking the covenant that was made. You think that this covenant here was the tough one, well, the New Covenant was even tougher when you come to really understand it.

Moses reiterated it again. Before they went into the ‘promised land,’ God made sure that Moses let them know everything. As a matter of fact, the word Deuteronomy means *the second giving of the Law*. You have the generation who came out of Egypt that heard it at Mt. Sinai, and they didn’t go

into the ‘promised land’ because of their sin. Then you have the generation 40 years later that was ready to go in, and now Moses gave them the Law again! He sums it up:

Deuteronomy 32:44: “And Moses came and spoke all the words of this song in the ears of the people, he and Joshua the son of Nun. And Moses made an end of speaking **all these words**... [of the song (Deut. 32)] ...to all Israel. And he said to them, ‘Set your hearts to all the words which I testify among you today, which you shall command your children to observe and to do, **all the words of this Law**. For it *is* no vain thing for you because it is your life. And by this word you shall prolong *your* days in the land where you go over Jordan, there to possess it” (vs 44-47).

God always writes it down! The Word of God is fantastic, brethren; it is absolutely marvelous! We have all of it! The Word of God is the greatest, most precious thing that we have. The Word of God is what we need:

- to know
- to understand
- to live by
- to think by
- to run our lives

We have our sins and faults and weaknesses. But God’s mercy and love and grace is there to cover us.

- He’s called us
- He’s given us His Spirit
- He love us
- He knows that we going to have our faults and shortcomings

I tell you what, if you love God and love His Word, and are striving with all that is in you, do you not want to correct those things that are not right? *Sure you do!*

I’m also convinced that God allows each one of us to have one particular sin or weakness or fault that kind of plagues us all of our life. I’m sure that if you sat down and thought of it, you could probably name yours. I know that I could name mine. I think that God does that so that we will understand that **salvation only comes from Him!** Overcoming is only through *His Spirit!*

Psalm 147:19: “He declares His word unto Jacob, His statutes and His ordinances unto Israel. He has not done so with any *other* nation; and as for his ordinances, they have not known them. O praise the LORD!” (vs 19-20). Isn’t that something? Isn’t that true? The very nation that God dealt with—Israel and Judah—are the one who really ought to know

God. The rest of the world is cutoff and blinded. They don't even know His judgments.

We are told concerning false prophets that you will 'know them by their works, by their fruits.' What is the most important fruit that you will know them by? They may look pleasant; they may look humble and sound sincere. What is the most important fruit to look to? *Their words! Their teachings!* You can't base anything on a feeling, supposition or speculation. That's how con-artists work. They make people *feel* good. That's why they are called *confidence men*. They gain your confidence.

What happens when you operate upon feelings and not fact? If you're dealing with a conman who is after your money, you generally have less of it. Let's understand that *spiritually!* If you listen to a conman spiritually, he's going to rob you of God's way, because that's his purpose.

This where John the Baptist is speaking to the scribes and Pharisees John 3:31: "He Who comes from above is above all. The one who is of the earth is earthly, and speaks of the earth. He Who comes from heaven is above all; and what He has seen and heard, this *is what* He testifies; but no one receives His testimony. The one who has received His testimony has set his seal that God is true; **for He Whom God has sent speaks the words of God...**" (vs 31-34).

- since God's Word has been purified seven times
- since God's Word is the Truth
- since God's Word leads to salvation
  - ✓ Why would anyone want to preach any other thing?
  - ✓ Why would anyone want to twist it and distort it for 'pet' doctrines?

The principle is true, not only applied to Christ, but to someone who does not adhere to the sound words of Christ, the wholesome words of Christ, and the doctrine which is according to teaching, *withdraw yourself from it, so you won't be polluted by it!* "**...for He Whom God has sent speaks the words of God.**"

"...and God gives not the Spirit by measure unto Him. The Father loves the Son and has given all things into His hand. The one who believes in the Son has everlasting life; but the one who does not obey the Son shall not see life, for the wrath of God remains on him" (vs 34-36).

As we saw in Psa. 73, temporarily in this life he may have a lot of pleasures of wickedness, because 'there's pleasure in sin for a season.' There

is the reward of wickedness that Balaam sought. But sooner or later the wrath of God will abide upon him.

John 6 is when Jesus fed the 5,000; of course, if you were just a carnal person and you could see that every time the disciples broke off some bread, the loaf grew. Every time they gave out fish, more were created in the basket. That would be phenomenal to see. Jesus didn't feed just 40 or 50 people, He fed 5,000! And they wanted to make Him king, because what better king could you have than someone who would give you miraculous food. We won't have to work anymore, He will provide it.

John 6:1: "After these things, Jesus crossed over the Sea of Galilee (*or Sea of Tiberias*)." They went all over the place looking for Him, and finally found Him and said to Him:

Verse 25: "And after finding Him *on* the other side of the sea, they said to Him, 'Rabbi, when did You come here?' Jesus answered them and said, 'Truly, truly I say to you, you do not seek Me because you saw *the* miracles, but because you ate the bread and were satisfied. Do not labor *for* the food that perishes, but *for* the food that endures unto eternal life, which the Son of man shall give to you; for Him has God the Father sealed.' Therefore, they said to Him, 'What shall we do, in order that we ourselves may do the works of God?'" (vs 25-28)—so we can be fed! That was the whole point!

There are a lot of people who want to do the works of God. In some ways I have an aversion to the term *work of God*. We've heard it for so long, and have had it misapplied. Here's what Jesus said when they wanted to misapply it:

Verse 29: "Jesus answered and said to them, **'This is the work of God: that you believe in Him Whom He has sent.'**"

The long and short of it, brethren, is that in this life *the greatest work you can do is totally believe in Jesus Christ*, have faith in Him, and love God the Father and Jesus Christ. There is no greater work! That is greater than physical things, greater than food; in fact, greater than physical life because it has the assurance of *eternal life!*

Since one day we're all going to face the grave, we need to understand that the most important thing *are those things that lead to eternal life.*

Verse 30: "Therefore, they said to Him, 'What sign will You perform, that we may see *it* and believe You? What work will You do? Our fathers ate manna...'" (vs 30-31). It gets right back to food; they're actually tempting Jesus and are saying, 'We'll believe You if you give us manna. That's

virtually what they're saying.

“...in the wilderness, as it is written: “He gave them bread to eat *that came down* from heaven”” (v 31). They were even ‘religious’ and quoted Scripture. But they were twisting it for their own use; a very good example of not adhering to the words of God, but wanting to use part of the Word of God for a benefit for self. That’s where most people really fall short.

Verse 32: “Then Jesus said to them, ‘Truly, truly I say to you, Moses did not give you the Bread from heaven; but My Father gives you the true Bread from heaven.’”

He didn’t even answer the question. What did He do? *He was exposing their desire for a physical thing by pointing them to the spiritual thing!*

Verse 33: “For the Bread of God is He Who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world.” They didn’t have a clue as to what He was saying.

Verse 34: “Therefore, they said to Him, ‘Lord, give this bread to us always.’ Jesus said to them, ‘I AM the Bread of Life; the one who comes to Me shall never hunger; and the one who believes in Me shall never thirst at any time. But *as* I said to you, **you also have seen Me, yet, you do not believe**” (vs 34-36). After a few other exchanges, and saying, ‘How can He be the One?’

Verse 43: “For this reason, Jesus answered them and said, ‘Do not be complaining among one another.’” They were talking back and forth, ‘How can this be? This is just the son of Joseph, we know who He is; He grew up in Nazareth! We know Galilee, and no good thing comes out of Galilee. No prophet ever came out of Galilee.’ You can just hear them arguing back and forth.

Then Jesus said, v 44: “No one can come to Me... [no one has the power—‘dunamais’—*you cannot, no power*] ...unless the Father, Who sent Me, draws him...” That’s why it is so vitally important for you to understand concerning the words of God. God Himself, in heaven above, ***has personally called you, and everyone who has the Spirit of God!***

Unfortunately, we’re dealing with a lot of tares and wolves, and they have been infiltrated into the Church. That’s where all of these *false things* have come from. That’s why Paul said that if they don’t adhere to the sound wholesome words of Jesus Christ, *withdraw yourself!*

- You have been called by God the Father

Himself!

- He has drawn you!
- He has led you to repentance!
- He has given you the Holy Spirit!
- He has given you understanding of His Word!

“...and I will raise him up at the last day” (v 44). This is not the Last Great Day. This the last day of human rule (Rev. 11) where the seventh trump is blown the resurrection takes place. ‘Then the kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ.’ That is the last day for us, not the Last Great Day Feast.

Verse 45: “It is written in the prophets, ‘And they shall all be taught by God.’...” Let’s understand why it’s so important that whomever God sends is going to speak the words of God. These are the words of God and you are to be taught the words of God, with the sound doctrine that comes from Jesus Christ. “...they shall all be taught by God....”

Let’s understand something that is very important. When you read the Bible and you understand it, Who is teaching you? *God is!* When you come to Sabbath services and you hear a sermon—or if you’re in your home and listening to a sermon—and you understand what is being said, that it is the Word of God, that it is true—even though you hear my voice—Who is really teaching you? *God is!*

So, anyone who is a true teacher of Christ and God is going to be the one who is speaking the words to make it understandable for you to know it. When you have that conviction in mind, when it gets in your mind, and you say, ‘Aha!’ Who has opened your mind to understand? *It’s been God through the power of the Holy Spirit in your mind that makes that connection!* That’s what it is. That’s why it’s so important that the words of God be followed.

“...Therefore, everyone who has heard from the Father, and has learned, comes to Me” (v 45). Not in exactly the same way that it was with Jesus Christ. He saw the Father every day, was taught of the Father, and by 12-years-old He understood that He was to be about His Father’s business, and knew more than all the priests and scribes in Jerusalem.

We’re not taught that way, but we are taught of the Father. We have learned of the Father if we study the Word of God, if we live by the Word of God, and on Sabbath when this is the day that God has blessed—and the most important day of the week so that we can have fellowship with God the Father and each other—then we learn of the Father. He is the One Who is doing the teaching, through

the power of the Holy Spirit. That's why all of these political church meetings are an abomination to God! They are stifling the Spirit of God and stifling the ability of people to be taught of God, because there are preaching the precepts of men! That's why we are to separate from those who don't adhere to the words of Christ.

When you're in these political meetings and false doctrines are coming in, after a while you get brainwashed. What was the first thing that was attacked? The first thing that is always attacked? *The nature of God and the nature of Christ!* When that is attacked and they get you confused...

The first step is to get you confused from the Truth by mixing it in such a way that it sounds 'religious' but it is not really the words of Christ. Then you're all confused. What has to happen? *They have to come along and 'straighten you out'!* They straighten you out with their own more confusion and doctrines.

That's just the way that it goes. It's kind of like this report that I saw: you buy a car, here's the price of the car, here's your monthly payment. They ask you the realm of 'how much you can afford?' 'Well, \$248/mo,' and what happened was that they actually added in to the cost of the car to begin with all the five year's interest that you're going to pay. BINGO! right up front!

People read that and say, 'I'm confused.' I thought it was only this much.' *Let me help your confusion.* It's the same way 'religiously.' You get a lot of those who should be used car salesmen preaching and they get everybody confused, and then they come and try to 'help you with your confusion' and pretty soon you agree with them, because you're confused like they're confused, and you understand their confusion; *so you agree!* Pretty soon all the confusion will get to you and your whole operation of thinking will change from thinking the way God wants you to, to the way of thinking that Satan wants you to.

It was actually preached from the pulpit of the Worldwide Church of God that the WCG is not part of the Universal Holy Catholic Church! I said that years ago that was going to happen. I'm not any great genius or prophet—please understand that—I'm not! But after a while when you watch all of these false prophets do all the things that they do, pretty soon you can predict exactly where they are going. It doesn't take a genius to figure it out.

But the great, great hindrance is that when those things are done, they stop everyone from learning from God. That's something! ***All that you understand of God's Word has come from God!***

- Who has given you the Spirit? *God the Father!*
- Who has given you His Word? *God the Father and Jesus Christ!*

In spite of men, it is here in the Bible, as pure a form as you're going to get. You can be taught of God! That's what is so important in why we come to Sabbath services, why we study the Bible, and why we do these things: ***so that we are taught of God!*** There is an interaction that takes place.

There may be some things that are hard to understand, but don't worry about it; you'll understand later. God is going to teach you, and you will know, provided that you do this:

John 6:56: "The one who eats My flesh and drinks My blood is dwelling in Me, and I in him." There's an absolute distinct barrier between those who are Christ's and those who are not.

We're going to see that there are some who belong to Christ, such as the apostles and disciples, then you have those who believe in Christ ***but don't believe Him unto salvation!*** They're not willing to take the hard sayings of God. Some of the things we've discussed here are some pretty hard sayings.

Verse 57: "As the living Father has sent Me, and I live by the Father; so also the one who eats Me shall live by Me." By every Word of God! That's what it's all about, anything else is a diversion.

Verse 58: "This is the Bread, which came down from heaven; not as your fathers ate manna, and died. The one who eats this bread shall live forever.' These things He said in *the* synagogue as He was teaching in Capernaum. Therefore, after hearing *these words*, many of **His disciples** said, 'This is a hard saying. Who is able to hear *it*?' (vs 58-60). And many of them turned away.

Verse 61: "But Jesus, knowing that His disciples were complaining about this, said to them, 'Does this offend you? What if you shall see the Son of man ascending up where He was before? It is the Spirit that gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you, *they* are Spirit and *they* are Life'" (vs 61-63)—*spiritual life!* We're talking about eternal life!

Verse 57: "**As the living Father...** [life comes from the Father] ...has sent Me, and **I live** by the Father; so also the one who eats Me **shall live** by Me." That can only be accomplished through the Spirit.

Verse 63: "It is the Spirit that gives life; the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you,

*they are Spirit and they are Life.*”

That is why if anyone is speaking contrary to the wholesome words of Christ and the sound doctrine we have received, ***we are to withdraw ourselves from them!*** It’s taking you away from eternal life! You think about that, and think about all the people that you have known in the past:

- Where are they today?
- What are they doing today?
- Did they get off track because they were listening to words that were not according to the words of God and the sound doctrine? *Yes!*
- Did that quench the Spirit gradually? *Yes!*
- Did they have their minds reoriented to false things? *Yes!*

We need to understand that the words that Jesus spoke, we have recorded for us. “...*they are Spirit and they are Life.*”

Verse 45: “It is written in the prophets, ‘And they shall all be taught by God.’ Therefore, everyone who has heard from the Father, and has learned, comes to Me.”

Tie those together and it is the Word of God Who is teaching us! What is the name of Christ?

John 1:1: “In *the beginning* was **the Word**, and **the Word** was with God, and **the Word** was **God**.” All that ties in right here.

John 6:64: “‘But there are some of you who do not believe.’ For Jesus knew from *the beginning* who were the ones that did not believe, and who would betray Him.”

Let’s understand something else, and let’s apply a little understanding.

Matthew 13:36: “...His disciples came to Him, saying, ‘Explain to us the parable of the tares of the field.’ And He answered *and* said to them, ‘The One Who sows the good seed is the Son of man; and the field is the world; and the good seed, these are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*’” (vs 36-38).

Were there tares back in John 6:64? “...who were the ones that did not believe...” Were they with the disciples, among them, but still did not believe? *Yes, they were tares!* Who was the biggest tare who was sown by the devil? *Judas Iscariot!*

Since Jesus knew those who did not believe, does Jesus know who does not believe who are attending Churches of God today? Who are really not true believers, but tares? *Yes!* Tares are always ‘religious.’ That’s how they appear: *sanctimonious!*

Matthew 13:39: “Now, the enemy who sowed them is the devil; and the harvest is *the end* of the age, and the reapers are the angels.” I think that right now God is doing a lot of separating of the wheat from the tares. But could it be that Satan is sowing hundreds of tares to one real Christian, by comparison in numbers. If you look at the Christianity of the world, thousands and thousands, millions of tares? *Yes!*

John 6:64: “But there are some of you who do not believe.’ For Jesus knew from *the beginning* who were the ones that did not believe, and who would betray Him. And He said, ‘For this reason, I have said to you, no one can come to Me unless it has been given to him from My Father’” (vs 64-65). ***That is a gift from the Father!***

Verse 66: “From that *time*, many of His disciples went back and walked no more with Him.” They could not endure the sound words of Jesus Christ, that’s why! Even though they are a little difficult to understand, but we are told that ***if we do the will of the Father***, we will understand the doctrine, whether it is from God or not.

Verse 67: “Therefore, Jesus said to the twelve, ‘Are you also desiring to go away?’ Then Simon Peter answered Him, ‘Lord, to whom shall we go? You have the words of eternal life; and we have believed and have known that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God’” (vs 67-69). Even though Peter said this, he was taking it as something that he had done himself. We just read that it was ***given of the Father!***

Verse 70: “Jesus answered them, ‘Did I not choose you twelve, and one of you is a devil?’” He is saying that you may believe this, but not because of yourself, but because He chose it.

Let’s see where all of this is to lead us—the wholesome words of Christ and so forth. What is the purpose of this relationship that God has given us?

- that He would call us?
- that He would teach us?
- that He would give us of His Spirit?

What is the purpose of all of this?

If we focus in spiritually on the purpose of what God wants done, then *this will help us to understand where we’re going and what we need to be doing!* It will also ensure that we’re never going to be led astray if we are constantly practicing and applying these things.

Ephesians 4:11: “And He gave some as apostles, and some prophets...” Prophets are not necessarily those who foretell events, but they are

forth-telling God's Word, *inspired speaking*.

"...and some evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers" (v 11). All of these are *functions* of elders. Paul said, 'I'm an apostle, I'm a teacher, I'm a minister, I'm a servant.' What is he? *All!* It's not a rank, it's a function!

When he's teaching, he's a teacher—a function of teaching, though he be an apostle. So, we've look at this before and it was some great 'rank' thing and everyone who was put in these positions were all elevated higher and higher. What has happened is that God has brought them lower and lower. It was misapplied and we didn't understand the whole purpose as to why God gave it.

Here's the purpose, v 12: "**For the perfecting of the saints...**" So they can all be taught of God the Father through the wholesome words of Jesus Christ and with sound doctrine; that's how you are perfected.

"...for the work of the ministry... [and it is work] ...for the edifying of the body of Christ" (v 12)—to build up, as one would build a house. Christ wants you built up:

- the edifying
- the strengthening
- the teaching
- the believing

All of this all comes together.

Verse 13: "**Until we all come into the unity of the faith...**" What is that perfect faith? *Jesus Christ!* Not political movements done by men who are trying to gather numbers. Listen! Christ said that all that are scattered, He's going to gather. He will do it for those who are preaching the Truth. God will send them to those who are preaching the Truth if they are truly seeking the Truth. That will happen.

"...and of the knowledge of the Son of God..." (v 13). That's what we need to learn about, *Jesus Christ!* We don't need to learn about sociology and psychology and how to be successful in the world. If we're successful with God, we'll be successful with the things that we do in the world to the degree that we follow the principles of God. God can bless us above and beyond far more than we could do by our greatest skills by pulling ourselves up by our bootstraps.

"...unto a perfect man... [wholly *spiritually mature*] ...**unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ**" (v 13). That's the whole purpose of teaching. That's the whole purpose of the sound words of Jesus Christ. That is some goal! To where when you either come to the end of

your life because of age, or you are alive by the time Christ returns; at the resurrection that you are "...**of the stature of the fullness of Christ.**" That's what it needs to be.

Verse 14: "So that we no longer be children, tossed and carried about with every wind of doctrine by the sleight of men in *cunning* craftiness, with a view to the systematizing of the error." In other words, making the error a 'religious' system, and every wind of doctrine!

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) 1 Timothy 6:1-2
- 2) Ephesians 6:5-9
- 3) Galatians 3:26-28
- 4) 1 Corinthians 7:20-24
- 5) John 8:31-34
- 6) 1 Timothy 6:2-5
- 7) Matthew 10:34
- 8) Hebrews 4:12
- 9) Matthew 10:35-39
- 10) Matthew 7:21-27
- 11) Psalm 73:1-28
- 12) John 7:16-18
- 13) Titus 1:9
- 14) Romans 16:17-18
- 15) Exodus 24:3-4, 6-8
- 16) Deuteronomy 32:44
- 17) Psalm 147:19-20
- 18) John 3:31-36
- 19) John 6:1, 25-45, 56-63, 57, 63, 45
- 20) John 1:1
- 21) John 6:64
- 22) Matthew 13:36-38
- 23) John 6:64
- 24) Matthew 13:39
- 25) John 6:64-70
- 26) Ephesians 4:11-14

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Deuteronomy 32
- Revelation 11

Also referenced:

- Sermon Series: *Epistles of John*
- Book: *The Seven General Epistles* by Fred R. Coulter

FRC:bo  
Transcribed: 2-23-15

## Pastoral Epistles VII False Teachers

(1-Timothy 6)  
Fred R. Coulter

I want to read you something that is important from a document called *Vatican 2000*. I want to bring this out in relationship to where we are in 1-Tim. 6, and let's talk a little bit about the ecumenical movement in the world, but also there is an ecumenical movement in the various Churches of God. When I say Churches of God, I mean the different named Churches of God wherever they are. So, unless someone confuse that with *the* Church of God, which is *the spiritual body of Christ*, those who have the Holy Spirit of God regardless of which corporate church they affiliate with.

As we go back and look at the things that we did on the Parliament of Religions—the coming united religion in the world—what we need to understand is that this has been going on for nearly 100 years. The first Parliament of World Religions was in Chicago in 1897 and the other one was 100 years later in 1997.

There have been moves toward ecumenism and the whole thing is to bring everybody home to Rome. What I want you to understand is some of the things that have been done.

Taken from Vatican 2000: quoting from *The Encyclopedia Britannica* concerning some of the things that was done by the Catholics and their ecumenical movement:

The World Missionary Conference of 1910, held in Edinburgh, marked the beginning of modern ecumenism.

with the Catholics opening up

From it flowed three streams of ecumenical endeavor: evangelistic, service, and doctrinal. Today, these three aspects are furthered through the World Council of Churches, constituted in 1948...

The World Council of Churches at this present time is wholly given over to the ecumenism.

...in the early 1980s it included more than 295 churches in more than 90 countries.

Below the World Council of Churches is the National Council of Churches. So, the WCC also controls the NCC. One of the ways that they have done to bring about ecumenism is to get everybody together in associations. Then we will see the goal, where it's headed to.

The evangelical concern of modern ecumenism brought about the formation, in 1921, of the International Missionary Council, comprising 17 national mission organizations. It coordinated mission strategy and aided new churches.

The service efforts made by Christians across denominational and national boundaries came to fruition in 1925, in Stockholm, when the Universal Christian Conference on Life and Work was convened to study the application of the gospel to industrial, social, political, and international affairs.

That is still going on through the Catholic organization called Opus D, to where they have Catholics who get into high positions economically, politically, religiously and what they want to do is to bring about the laws of the nations to conform to Catholic law; i.e. most particularly *Sunday*.

We saw an example of that when Pope John Paul II visited St. Louis. The Governor of Missouri, a Baptist, followed the lead of the pope in commuting a sentence of a vicious killer who had killed three people, and commuted his sentence to life. Most people haven't even thought of it, but what has happened is the pope's power extended to cause this man to renounce the Constitution of the United States, to renounce the Constitution of Missouri, to renounce the oath of his office that he would uphold the Constitution from all enemies foreign and domestic.

That is just one example of how the ecumenical movement is really reaching out. Remember, this started way long ago. They want to get into industrial, and of course, the unions are all in that. Social, that's all now with the social movements of 'right to life' and so forth. Political and international affairs.

This movement proceeded under the slogan "service unites but doctrine divides."

There's even one man who has a Christian educational ministry who says the same thing for the Churches of God: "service unites but doctrine divides." Doctrine does divide Truth from error.

Let's review 1-Tim. 6 just a little bit. Doctrine does make a difference. It divides Truth

from error, right from wrong, good from evil. It's really true that you cannot attain to the Kingdom of God unless you have sufficiently correct doctrine. All you have to do is look at Rev. 2 & 3 and the problems with the Church of God. Every single one of them were problems that stemmed from doctrinal things that came in. Especially with doctrines that they went out into the world to see what the other 'religions have and bring those doctrines into the Church. Or allow the world come in and teach. Or in the case of Thyatira, 'let that woman who calls herself Jezebel'—which is the Catholic Church—to come in and teach Catholic doctrine.

1-Timothy 6:3: "If anyone teaches any different doctrine, and does not adhere to sound words, *even those* of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the doctrine *that is* according to Godliness." Doctrine means *teaching*, and "...doctrine *that is* according to Godliness" is teaching that will help you understand eternal life.

You have to have the Spirit of God in order to understand it. Remember what Jesus said? We are living right in the time of Matt. 24. History has cycles and repeats itself. What happened toward the close of the New Testament era of the apostles, of which Paul was writing about in 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Tim. They were going through the cycles of false teachers. They had false teachers beginning with those Judaizers who originally were with the circumcision party, who were originally part of the Church. Then they drifted away and separated themselves at the time of the ministerial conference in Acts 15, and the Pharisees were never heard of again.

They became the Ebionites, who rejected all the teachings of Paul on grace and justification. They kept all of the works and rituals of Judaism. Later there came in another element about the time of the Apostle John toward the end of the 90<sub>S.A.D.</sub> where there were the Gnostic teachers coming in. These were Christianized pagans who were coming in and teaching.

Or, as we have seen today, many who were *in attendance* in different congregations and when the Church was scattered or going through the upheavals then—as it is now—different ones went out and became teachers. When someone has been in the Church of God, maybe even for years, what happens when brethren hear a person like that? *They think that this person really knows and understands!* He should, but...

Matthew 24:4: "Then Jesus answered *and* said to them, 'Be on guard, so that no one deceives you.'" The very first thing He said. We are finding that a lot of those ministers—professed teachers—

are actually deceiving and misleading people, leading them astray. Some so much so that people are going out and doing things that are really incredible.

For example, many of you don't realize that we saw the apostasy happen within the Worldwide Church of God. There was minister within the WCG who preached a sermon saying that the WCG really means *The Universal Church of God*. The WCG is part of the 'Universal Holy Catholic Church.' That was said right from the pulpit.

On the other hand, and this was in a Dallas newspaper, there was a rabbi singer who went to Big Sandy and met with about 35 people down there, most of whom were ex-Worldwidiers. He was teaching them about Judaism. He was telling them they had to renounce Christ. He was telling them they had to follow and practice the laws of Judaism, and that Christ was a charlatan, a fake and all of those things. *And there are people who believe it!*

One was confronted with a problem: If I embrace Judaism and my spouse doesn't, what happens? *You can't sleep with a Gentile!*

Verse 5<sub>[transcriber's correction]</sub>: "For many shall come in My name, saying, 'I am the Christ'; and they shall deceive many." We also have the phenomena that there will be those coming saying that Christ was not the Christ.

Here is something that is absolutely true, and we have seen time and time again, 1-Timothy 6:4: "He is proud and knows nothing. Rather, he has a morbid attraction to questions and disputes over words..." I've had umpteen dozen paper pass over my desk all during the years of my ministry.

"...from which come envy, arguments, blasphemy, wicked suspicions, vain reasonings of men who have been corrupted in *their* minds and *are* destitute of the Truth—*men* who believe that gain is Godliness. **From such withdraw yourself**" (vs 4-5). That can be:

- gain in numbers
- gain in property
- gain in money
- gain in buildings
- Isn't that what happens when people look to all the physical things?
- Didn't we, in our past experience, also equate the same thing?

If we had certain increase in income we were righteous, and God was with us. But now you look at it and know that's not true, because God is dealing with the *true doctrine* and the things that lead to Godliness.

Now let's look at some things that are important to know, and that is those who do those things actually reject the Word of God. This is what we're seeing over and over again. Not only in the translations that are out there. Remember *The New Age Bible Versions* by G. A. Riplinger. That was quite a book really exposing how bad the NIV, the *New American Standard* and the Catholic Bible and you can throw in the Jehovah's Witnesses' Bible in there with it. They all corrupted the Word of God.

2-Corinthians 2:17: "For we are not like the many, who for *their own* profit are corrupting the Word of God... [not just writing, but preaching, by misapplication, wrong doctrine] ...but we speak with sincerity, as from God, *and* before God, *and* in Christ." That's what it has to be with everything that is done and true doctrine, doing it in the sight of God, before Him.

2-Corinthians 4:2—another thing that Paul was seeing: "For we have personally renounced the hidden things of dishonest gain, not walking in *cunning* craftiness, nor handling the Word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the Truth, we are commending ourselves to every man's conscience before God." There again in the sight of God handling the Word of God deceitfully. That's what they do.

One of the famous things that they do is the abbreviated thing they do with the Ten Commandments. They throw out the whole second commandment and they split the tenth commandment. That's how they have ten commandments. It goes from 'You shall have no other gods before me,' to you 'shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain.' Just take and cut it right out and throw it away if you don't like it. If it offends you get rid of it.

Well, God did not create the Bible by committee or a CNN Gallop Poll. He inspired it in His own words. Let's see what happens when people throw out parts of the Bible. *They reject the Word of God!* Remember, Jesus said, 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God shall man live.' That becomes very important.

It's really important to know and understand everything that's in the Bible to the best of our ability. I have read the biography of William Tyndale by David Daniell—*William Tyndale: A Biography*. He said that when Tyndale did his other writings, other than translating the New Testament, he showed an understanding of the Scriptures that was really tremendous. What he would do is layer his presentation with Scripture after Scripture and *let the Scriptures tell the story*. This is one of the things

that's very important. It reaffirms what we do, and it also reaffirms that the Spirit of God is the 'same yesterday, today and forever,' because Christ is. Therefore, what Tyndale was inspired to do is what Christ will always inspire to do, so that the people of God will know and understand the Word of God. That was quite amazing, and when I read that I was really dumbfounded to see him write that.

1-Samuel 15:22: "And Samuel said, 'Does the LORD *have as great* delight in burnt offerings and sacrifice...'"

Remember what Jesus said about the first commandment: *You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, mind, soul and being, and your neighbor as yourself!* Then the lawyer answered back to Christ and said, 'Yea, and to love God is more than all burnt offerings.' And Jesus said, 'You're not far from the Kingdom of God.' So, we have the same teaching here, exactly!

"... 'Does the LORD *have as great* delight in burnt offerings and sacrifice as in obeying the **voice of the LORD?**.... [doctrine] ...Behold, to obey *is* better than sacrifice! To hearken *is* better than the fat of rams" (v 22). Whenever you read the word hearken, it means *listen to hear and understand*. Jesus said in one place to His disciples, 'Let this saying sink deep into your ears.' That's what *hearken* means; let it register upon your brain.

Verse 23: "For rebellion *is as* the sin of witchcraft... [doing the *opposite of What God says*] ...and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because you have rejected the Word of the LORD, He has also rejected you from being king!"

Do we have examples of that in the New Testament, about those who will be rejected because they did not follow the words of Christ? *Yes!* Matt. 7:21-23—all those who say, 'Lord, Lord.... Didn't we prophesy in Your name? Didn't we cast out demons in Your name? Didn't we do many wonderful works in Your name?' And Jesus says, 'I profess to you, I never knew you.' So, we have the same thing.

Verse 26: "And Samuel said to Saul, 'I will not return with you, for you have rejected the Word of the LORD, and the LORD has rejected you from being king over Israel.'" We don't know if he later repented or not.

Let's see that that is a sin that has happened all the way through the history of mankind, beginning with Adam and Eve. What was it that Adam and Eve did? *They rejected the Word of God and ate of the tree!* Didn't God ask them, when He found them hiding in the Garden, 'Have you disobeyed My voice in saying that you should not

eat of the tree? Have you eaten of that tree?"

Jeremiah 8:5: "Why has this people of Jerusalem slidden back *by* a never-ending backsliding?..." That's something! The people that God originally chose—the 12 tribes of Israel—always backslide on God. God even said in another place, 'If I would have gone to any of the heathen they would have kept it.

"...They hold fast to deceit; they refuse to repent. I listened and heard, *but* they did not speak right; no man repented of his wickedness, saying, 'What have I done?'..." (vs 5-6). I think if George Washington were resurrected today—and all of the rest of the founding fathers—and lined them up and brought them into the Congress, they would renounce it as a corrupt body.

But the reason that the people are that way is because the morals of the nation have slid down so low that they view those things as non-consequential. I think Delores had the right solution: pass a law that all people who are in Federal jails now who have committed perjury should be immediately released. Because if the President can get away with it, then everybody should be able to get away with it. Doesn't that tell you the state of the morals of the people? *Certainly it does!*

"...Everyone turned in their own courses, as the horse rushes into the battle" (v 6). Have you ever tried to stop a running horse galloping head on into battle or down the road? You can't turn it back. That's how people are set for it.

Verse 7: "Yea, the stork in heaven knows her appointed times; and the turtle and the crane and the swallow watch the time of their migration; but my people do not know the judgment of the LORD. How do you say, 'We *are* wise, and the Law of the LORD *is* with us'?'..." (vs 7-8). That's exactly what people claim—don't they? Somewhere along the line they've always got to put God's name in it somewhere.

"...Lo, certainly the lying pen of the scribes has written falsely" (v 8). In other words, he's saying that God make the Word of God in vain, even though we have it. We have the Word of The Lord, but there's a lot in there 'we don't like; there's a lot that we don't want.'

Verse 9: "The wise men are ashamed, they are terrified, and are captured. Lo, they have turned away from the Word of the LORD; and what wisdom *is* in them?" When people reject the Word of the Lord, have these false doctrines, continue that way, it's really quite a thing.

Here's what eventually happens, just like

history repeats itself, there are cycles in history. Cycles of wickedness repeat themselves, too. Here's the way that society is today, and this is what happens when people teach the doctrines that are not the sound doctrines and words of Jesus Christ. We have the principle in the Bible that applies: *A little leaven leavens the whole lump!* When you have sin come in, or false doctrine come in, if you don't correct it or change it or repent of it then that leads to more, and that leads to more to where you come to this point:

Isaiah 5:20: "Woe to those who call evil good and good evil... [that's exactly where we are] ...who put darkness for light and light for darkness; who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter! Woe unto *them that are* wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight!" (vs 20-21). Why? *When you reject God*, what wisdom do you have at all? *None!*

Verse 22: "Woe unto *them that are* mighty to drink wine, and men of strength to mingle strong drink: Who justify the wicked for a bribe, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him!" (vs 22-23). That's what happens. People look upon those who want to love God, keep His laws and commandments. They despise them; they look down on them; you're crazy! You're weird! But their day is coming:

Verse 24: "Therefore, as the fire devours the stubble..." Have you ever seen stubble burnt? It almost explodes!

"...and the flame burns up the chaff... [it's going to happen] ...their root shall be like rottenness, and their blossoms shall go up like dust because they have cast away the Law of the LORD of hosts, and despised the Word of the Holy One of Israel" (v 24).

That's what people do when they have this kind of conduct. That's what's happened in 'religion' more than anything else. Religion in the world is that which has laid the foundation for what the society is doing. If the society understood, the Word of God is the absolute Truth and ground of morality, how much different would this society be? *Much, much different!*

Psalms 50:16: "But to the wicked God says, 'What right have you to declare My statutes, and to take up My covenant in your mouth?'" This applies to all of those who preach and teach false doctrine, misuse the Word of God in a corrupt way and use it deceitfully. Why do you even take it to your mouth if you're going to change it and pervert it?

Example: One of the reasons why it's

perfectly all right for people to keep Sunday, so they say, is because ‘Christ did it for us: He perfectly kept the Sabbath for us, and if we enter into His rest and have our sins forgiven, therefore, we no longer have to keep the Sabbath, because Sunday is the day.’

That’s a good example. People who have ‘itching’ ears, wanting to hear new things, that really makes them happy. God says, ‘What are you doing taking My words on your mouth; and My covenant?’

Verse 17: “Yea, you hate to be taught, and you cast My words behind you. When you saw a thief, then you were pleased to be with him, and you have taken part with adulterers. You give your mouth to evil, and your tongue frames deceit. You sit; you speak against your brother; you slander your own mother’s son. These things you have done, and I have kept silence; you thought that I was like yourself, but I will rebuke you, and set them in order before your eyes. **Now, consider this, you who forget God, lest I tear you in pieces, and there be none to deliver**” (vs 17-22).

You see, ultimately it’s going to come down to the judgment of God. Let’s see another warning that Jesus gave. This applies to any ‘religion.’ One thing that is true, **all ‘religions’ have their rules and regulations**. That’s why God does not want us to be a religion. The world can view us as a religion, because they don’t know how to approach God any other way.

God wants us to live in the way of the Lord. We are to walk in the way of Truth. Ours is not to be a ‘religion’ as the world knows it, with all of these exterior things that you do, all the rituals that you do. But as they look at us they will tell us that we are a ‘religious,’ but we’re really not.

- We’re really the people of God!
- We’re really the firstfruits called of Christ!
- We’re really those awaiting the first resurrection, to be part of the Church of the Firstborn!

Totally different; nevertheless, ‘religion’ is out there so we have to deal with it.

Matthew 16:6: “And Jesus said to them, ‘Watch out and be on guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.’” He explains what it is:

Verse 12: “Then they understood that He did not say to beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees”—and any other ‘religious’ teacher!

Here’s what we are to do. This is very important, and the key thing: Whenever anything is presented from the Scriptures, whenever there’s a

teacher, a minister, preacher or someone who is using the Bible, here’s what Paul wrote:

2-Timothy 2:15: “Diligently *study* to show yourself approved unto God, a workman who does not *need to be* ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of the Truth.” If you *rightly divide* the Word of Truth, then you’re going to put it together correctly. That’s what’s important.

Notice the verses just before this, v 14: “See that *they* remain mindful of these things, earnestly charging *them* in the sight of the Lord...” Go through and study how many times that Paul *charged* Timothy, and told Timothy to *charge* them.

“...**not to argue over words that are not profitable in any way**, but which lead to the subverting of those who hear.... [then we have]: ...Diligently *study* to show yourself approved unto God, a workman who does not *need to be* ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of the Truth; but avoid profane and vain babblings because they will *only* give rise to more ungodliness” (vs 14-16). Same thing as *a little leaven leavens the whole lump!*

The Word of God is so important that God exalts His Word above His name.

Jeremiah 23:21—God is talking about the false prophets: “I have not sent these prophets, yet, they ran; I have not spoken to them, yet, they prophesied.”

Notice that this shows the power of God’s Word, and it also shows that even though there are false prophets, as well as *true prophets*, **it is not the man who is important**. That’s something to really consider here:

Verse 22: “But if they had stood in My counsel... [even though He didn’t sent them] ...and had caused My people to hear My words... [instead of theirs] ...then they would have turned them from their evil way and from the evil of their doings.” He’s saying that they would have at least accomplished some good, even though God didn’t send them.

Verse 23: “‘Am I a God *Who is near*,’ says the LORD, ‘and not a God afar off? Can anyone hide himself in secret places so that I shall not see him?’ says the LORD. ‘Do I not fill the heavens and earth?’ says the LORD. ‘I have heard what the prophets said, who prophesy lies in My name...’” (vs 23-25). See the difference? If they would have prophesied *His* words, they could have made a difference. But instead they prophesied lies in God’s names.

“...saying, “I have dreamed, I have

dreamed.”... [there are many who have said that] ... How long shall *this* be in the heart of the prophets who prophesy lies and who are prophets of the deceit of their own heart? They scheme to cause My people to forget My name by their dreams which they tell, each one to his neighbor, as their fathers have forgotten My name for Baal. The prophet who has a dream, let him tell a dream. **And he who has My Word, let him speak My Word faithfully....”** (vs 25-28). That’s what God intends, because the Word of God is so absolutely marvelous.

“...What *is* the chaff to the wheat?’ says the LORD. ‘*Is* not My Word like a fire?’ says the LORD, ‘and like a hammer *that* breaks the rock in pieces? Therefore, behold, **I am against the prophets who steal My words.**... [use them to their own end] ...each one from his neighbor. Behold, I *am* against the prophets who use their tongues and say, “He says,” *when I did not say*. Behold, I *am* against those who prophesy false dreams and tell them, and cause My people to go astray by their lies and by their wantonness. Yet, I did not send them nor command them; therefore, they shall not profit this people at all,’ says the LORD” (vs 28-32). It’s quite a thing!

Verse 36: “**...for you have perverted the words of the living God, of the LORD of hosts our God.**” That’s why in writing, Paul says, ‘You adhere to the sound words of Jesus Christ, not unto any of those.’

There are several things in John that we will cover. This is true, this is always true. This is John the Baptist speaking of Jesus Christ:

John 3:31: “He Who comes from above is above all. The one who is of the earth is earthly, and speaks of the earth. He Who comes from heaven is above all; and what He has seen and heard, this *is what* He testifies; but no one receives His testimony. The one who has received His testimony has set his seal that God is true” (vs 31-33).

This is a very important point, a very fundamental thing in our lives. If you believe the Word of God, believe the Word of Truth, ***you have set your seal that God is true!*** That’s what it’s all about. Living in a world so filled with lies and deceit, that’s quite a thing! That’s quite a contrast.

Verse 34: “**For He Whom God has sent speaks the words of God.**...” We just read that God said that He didn’t send those prophets. So therefore, they misapplied His words and didn’t speak His words.

“...and God gives not the Spirit by measure unto Him [Christ]” (v 36). This is a true thing of all of

those who are going to be sent of God to preach. What are they going to preach?

If anyone who is a true minister of God has not really learned that to speak your own words, to preach your own doctrines are going to get you in trouble, You have to set your heart and mind to know and to understand that you are going to speak the words of God. Those are the words of eternal life.

Verse 35: “The Father loves the Son and has given all things into His hand. The one who believes in the Son has everlasting life...” (vs 35-36). ***The only way you can truly believe is with the Truth and the Word of God; no other way!***

“...but the one who does not obey the Son shall not see life, for the wrath of God remains on him” (v 36).

John 6:63: “It is the Spirit that gives [spiritual] life; the flesh profits nothing...” Even our human bodies come to the end.

(go to the next track)

Yet, the world glories in the flesh! “...the flesh profits nothing. The words that I speak to you, *they* are Spirit and *they* are Life” (v 63). That’s a very profound thing, because when you read the word of God, when it enters into your mind and you have understanding, there is a spiritual something that happens to you.

I’ve experienced that so many times in my lifetime in reading and studying the Word of God, and especially so when I go back over Scriptures and learn more out of the same Scriptures that I’ve already known for years and years. That is really thrilling!

This is something that happens to you when the Word of God has entrance into your heart and mind. It will give you:

- life
- hope
- love
- joy
- understanding

in spite of all the circumstances around.

That’s why there is nothing that can hold us back from the Kingdom of God if we really understand it, and do things the way that God wants them done.

These Scriptures are very important to remind us and help understand the true doctrines. Here is:

- the true doctrine of Jesus Christ

- the wholesome words of Jesus Christ
- the sound words of Jesus Christ

John 14:15: “If you love Me, keep the commandments—**namely, My commandments.**” In the Greek that is very emphatic! There is a way of writing it in the Greek that brings it out in a very emphatic way.

Verse 21: “The one who has My commandments and is keeping them...” It’s one thing to say that we have the commandments of God. The Protestants say that, and even the Catholics say that. But to truly have the commandments of God, and to truly keep them:

“...that is the one who loves Me; and the one who loves Me shall be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will manifest Myself to him” (v 21). That’s a profound thing. That’s why I have been emphasizing that God wants us in that love relationship with Him. That’s where it needs to start.

When you get into ‘religion,’ and your own experience has probably been the same, where was the love of God? Since the love of God is the greatest thing, and if you have people using the name of Christ and professing to be teachers and ministers of Christ, and don’t know the love of God and don’t teach the love of God, don’t understand the love of God, no wonder God is separating and scattering.

There’s one thing that you learn in distress and trouble: *you have to have God!* You come to learn this lesson:

Verse 23: “Jesus answered and said to him, ‘If anyone loves Me, he will keep My Word... [the wholesome and sound words of Jesus Christ] ...and My Father will love him, and **We will come to him and make Our abode with him.**” The Holy Spirit of God is consisting of the Spirit of Christ and the Spirit of the Father, both together *in you!*

Verse 24: “**The one who does not love Me does not keep My words...**” It’s not just restricted to the commandments, laws, statutes, judgments or anything like that. *It’s whatever Jesus has said;* it makes no difference. Those are the sound words of Christ.

“...and the word that you hear is not Mine, but the Father’s, Who sent Me” (v 24). We’re dealing with the direct words of God the Father when we truly, truly understand it. That’s how important it is.

John 12:42: “But even so, many among the rulers believed in Him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *Him*, so that they would not be

put out of the synagogue.” So, there’s religious and political power, and the leaders are subject to that.

Verse 43: “For they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God.” They put what other people thought about them ahead of what God thought about them.

Verse 44: “Then Jesus called out and said, ‘The one who believes in Me does not believe in Me, but in Him Who sent Me.... [going right back to God the Father] ...And the one who sees Me sees Him Who sent Me. I have come *as* a light into the world so that everyone who believes in Me may not remain in darkness. But if anyone hears My words and does not believe, I do not judge him; for I did not come to judge the world, but to save the world. The one who rejects Me and does not receive My words has one who judges him; the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day’” (vs 44-48). It’s going to happen one way or the other!

Verse 49: “For I have not spoken from Myself; but the Father, Who sent Me, gave Me commandment Himself, what I should say and what I should speak.” Again, going back to the Father.

If there’s any one thing that I think we’ve been learning—especially with the different controversies we’ve been having on *the way of God vs religion*, that is we are not a ‘religion.’ God does not want us to be ‘religious’ people the way the world understands us to be. He wants us to be connected to Him and God the Father, and it is *direct*, and with the *Spirit of God!*

Verse 50: “And I know that His commandment is eternal life. Therefore, whatever I speak, I speak exactly as the Father has told Me.”

Is it possible that those who are really true teachers of God that they would be faithful to the Word of God this way? The same way that Jesus Christ was? *That’s the only way that they’re going to help the brethren learn the Truth! There won’t be any other way!*

It says that ‘If they do not consent to the wholesome words, or the sound words, of Jesus Christ... Let’s do a little survey concerning the Word of God:

Psalms 12:1—this is like the world today; sometimes you feel this way: “Help, O LORD, for the Godly man ceases; for the faithful disappear from among the children of men.” Hasn’t that happened within the Church? *Many of those we thought were faithful have failed!* Where are they?

Verse 2: “They speak falsehood each one

with his neighbor; with flattering lips and a double heart they speak.... [they have a hidden agenda, a secret plan] ...The LORD shall cut off all flattering lips, *and* the tongue that speaks proud things, who have said, 'With our tongue we shall prevail; our lips are our own; who is lord over us?' 'For the oppression of the poor, for the sighing of the needy, I will now arise,' says the LORD. 'I will set him in safety from *him who puffs at him*'" (vs 2-5). God is showing that He will deliver one way or the other.

Verse 6: "**The words of the LORD are pure words, like silver tried in a furnace of earth, purified seven times.**" That's why we can rely on the Word of God.

Psalm 18:30: "As for God, His way is perfect; the Word of the LORD is tried.... [we can be sure of Him] ...He is a shield to all those who take refuge in Him, for who is God besides the LORD? Or, who is a Rock except our God? The God who girds me with strength and makes my way perfect" (vs 30-32). He relied on God and not on his own ways.

Psalm 138:1: "I will praise You with my whole heart; before the gods I will sing praise to You. I will worship toward Your Holy temple, and praise Your name for Your loving kindness, and for Your Truth; for **You have magnified above all—Your name and Your Word**" (vs 1-2). That's quite a profound verse. If you run into any sacred-namers, what you need to do is have them read this verse.

Psa. 119 is really a tremendous Psalm. We're going to do a quick survey with quite a few verses having to do with the Word of God; just the Word. It talks about:

- the Word of God
- the commandments of God
- the statutes of God
- the precepts of God
- the testimonies of God

I would suggest to anyone who is having difficulty understanding why we need to keep the words of God, go through and read and study this whole Psalm and let it sink in deep, because that will change your whole perspective. I did two sermons on Psa. 119 many years ago, actually showing that I think these are the prophetic words of Christ concerning His view toward the laws and commandments of God, because they are so profound! Not every verse, of course, but a good many of them.

Psalm 119:11: "**Your Word I have laid up in my heart**, so that I might not sin against You." How are you going to avoid sin? *Let the Word of*

*God rule in your heart and mind! Let the laws be written in your mind and heart!*

Verse 16: "**I will delight myself in Your statutes; I will not forget Your Word.** Deal bountifully with Your servant, that I may live and **keep Your Word**" (vs 16-17). It was David's desire to keep the Word of God!

The whole thrust and attitude of this Psalm is really absolutely amazing!

Verse 25: "My soul cleaves to the dust; revive me... [give life to me] ...**according to Your Word.**" That could apply to Christ as He was dying; that could apply to David when he was sick.

Verse 28: "My soul melts away for sorrow; strengthen me **according to Your Word.**" If you are overburdened with great problems and they are pressing in on you and just sort of crushing you down, go to the Word of God! Study the Word of God!

- let that lift you up
- let that encourage you
- let that give you hope

Verse 38: "Fulfill Your Word to Your servant, so that You may be feared." That's quite an attitude—isn't it? All of these show a tremendous converted attitude and a real love toward God's way, continuously.

Verse 41: "Let Your mercies come also unto me, O LORD, even according to Your salvation, **according to Your Word**, that I may have an answer for **the one who reproaches me, for I trust in Your Word**" (vs 41-42). That's why it's so important to really *know* it, really understand it, to be really grounded in it. There's going to come a time when someone is going to reproach you about it. But you're going to stand because you have the Word of God.

Verse 43: "And take not the **Word of Truth** utterly out of my mouth, for I have hoped in Your judgments."

Verse 50: "This is my comfort in my affliction, that **Your Word has given me life.**" There it is!

What does it say concerning Christ in the beginning of the Gospel of John? John 1:1: "In the beginning **was the Word**, and **the Word was with God**, and **the Word was God.**" When you trust His Word, you're trusting in Jesus Christ.

Psalm 119:49: "**Remember the Word** to Your servant upon which You have caused me to hope."

Verse 58: “I entreated Your favor with all my heart; be gracious unto me **according to Your Word.**” That’s why you can count on forgiveness from God. This is part of repentance. “I entreated Your favor...”—*grace!*

- you can trust in God for forgiveness
- you can trust in God to comfort you
- you can trust in God to help you
- you can trust in God uplift you
- you can trust in God to guide you with His Spirit

This is why when Paul wrote as he did, that we need to consent to the wholesome/sound words of Christ. There’s a reason for it, because when he writes something in the New Testament there’s this whole ‘iceberg.’ You know what an iceberg is like; about one-tenth of it is above water and nine-tenths below the water. You can’t see the nine-tenths. When Paul writes something in the New Testament, it’s equivalent to writing with the background with all that is in the Old Testament and all that is in the Gospels.

If we put it all together and examine it as if it were an iceberg and just look at the depths of it, then we will understand it and realize how great and marvelous God’s Word is. Here ***we have the whole Bible of God! The whole Word!*** Just think what God has done to get it to us, and what God expects of us because we have it. Yet, isn’t it so true, that though you have the whole Word of God—

- How many people have trouble studying?
- How many people have trouble praying?

—when you have every opportunity, and there is peace in the land, and all you have to do is open the Bible or go get on your knees.

- Doesn’t that tell you how devastating the pull of human nature is?
- Doesn’t that tell you what the law of sin in you does?

Paul said that the things he wanted to do, he couldn’t; and the things he didn’t want to do, he did; that there is this *war* going on within him. We can overcome that by realizing how great God’s Word is, and to really use it, know it and apply ourselves to it.

Verse 57: “You are my portion, O LORD; I have said that **I would keep Your words.**”

Verse 65: “You have dealt well with Your servant, O LORD, **according to Your Word.**”

Verse 67: “Before I was afflicted I went astray, but now **I have kept Your Word.**” What brought David back? *Trial! Difficulty!* If you have a trial or difficulty come along, don’t let it drive you away from God; let it drive you *to* God. You may not understand all the difficulty you’re going through.

Maybe it will be so bad that you don’t have a clue as to what is going on. But you still have to trust in God and have faith in God, then what will happen? *One day it will dawn on you—BING!—a light goes on and you will look back on that trial and difficulty—and because you trusted in God and were faithful in His Word clear up to the point where you begin to understand it, maybe it will be years later—and you will say ‘that’s why I went through this.’*

I’ve experienced that many, many times. Sometimes I go through things and I wonder why. Lot’s of times we go through things because of our own stupidity. We can figure those things out, but some of the other things we can’t.

This is quite a verse here, v 67: “Before I was afflicted I went astray, but now **I have kept Your Word**”—which then brings understanding.

Verse 74: “Those who fear You will be glad when they see me because **I have hoped in Your Word.**” I’m sure that has to do with Christ more than King David. There was even one man who was not happy to see him at all, and said, ‘You miserable, wretched king, you brought all this stuff on me, on us,’ and spit on the king.

Joab said, ‘Let me do him in.’ David said, ‘No, he’s speaking the truth, let him alone.’ Even in his misery, David learned things.

Verse 76: “I beseech You, let Your steadfast love comfort me, **according to Your promise** to Your servant. Let Your tender mercies come to me so that I may live, for Your Law is my delight” (vs 76-77).

Verse 81: “My soul faints for Your salvation; **I hope in Your Word.** My eyes fail for Your Word, saying, ‘When will You comfort me?’” (vs 81-82). Reasoning with God with the difficulties and problems that he was having there.

Verse 89: “Forever, O LORD, **Your Word is settled in the heavens.**” If the Word of God is settled forever in heaven, who is man to modify it and change it? You really need to think about it. That’s very important to realize. When you put it together with Psa. 138:2, that He magnifies His Word above His name, and His Word is settled in heaven. That’s quite something!

Verse 101: “I have held back my feet from

every evil way, **so that I might keep Your Word.**” You see what the Word of God does for you? *It gives you the ability, to give you character to not sin!*

Verse 105: **“Your Word is a lamp to my feet and a light to my path.”** Shows you the way to go. This is one that many people like to take and put up as kind of a little mural or plaque on the wall.

Just think about how many times you’ve gotten up at night when it’s really dark, especially somewhere where you are staying temporarily. For just an instant you forget where you are. I’ve had it happen even at home. I’d be sleeping so soundly, I’d wake up wondering where I am.

Just consider if it were pitched black and you had no light. What’s the first thing you do? *You go over and turn the switch on, so you can have light to see where you’re going!* The Word of God is just that way for us. ***It shows us how to walk the way of God by His Word!*** It gives us light, understanding and Truth.

Verse 107: “I am afflicted very much; O LORD, give me life **according to Your Word.**” Notice how many times David got into that when he was in trouble and difficulty.

Verse 116: **“Uphold me according to Your Word,** that I may live; and let me not be ashamed of my hope. Hold me up, and I shall be safe; and I will always have respect unto Your statutes” (vs 116-117).

Verse 133: **“Order my steps by Your Word...”**—*let me walk in Your Word.* I think that if most of us would really do this, this would be a tremendous thing! We all still have enough carnality that that’s something we need to come back to time and time again.

“...and do not let any iniquity have dominion over me” (v 133). What is this telling us? *That you will sin, but it’s not going to rule you!* If you have your steps ordered according to the Word of God, then the sin is not going to rule over you.

In Rom. 6 we are talking about living within the grace of God, that is in the Word of Christ, ordering your way in the grace of God.

Romans 6:1: “What then shall we say? Shall we continue in sin, so that grace may abound? MAY IT NEVER BE! We who died to sin, how shall we live any longer therein?” (vs 1-2)—live in it! It’s not saying that you won’t sin, but you’re not going to *live in sin.*

There’s a difference in having your way ordered in the Word of God, walking in the Word of

God, so that sin will not rule over you. You do sin, but you repent of that sin. When you are living in sin, you don’t repent of that sin. That’s what Paul is talking about. “...how shall we live any longer therein?”

Verse 3: “Or are you ignorant that we, as many as were baptized into Christ Jesus, were baptized into His death?” In other words, you died unto sin.

Verse 11: “In the same way also, you should indeed reckon yourselves to be dead to sin, but alive to God through Christ Jesus our Lord. Therefore, do not let sin rule... [reign or have dominion] ...in your mortal body by obeying it in the lusts thereof” (vs 11-12). That is amplified in:

Psa. 119:133: “Order my steps by Your Word, and do not let any iniquity have dominion over me.” That’s how it’s accomplished.

Verse 147: “I rose before the dawning of the morning and cried out for help; **I hoped in Your Word.** My eyes go before the night watches, **so that I might meditate on Your Word**” (vs 147-148). It was a day/night thing with David.

Verse 154: “Plead my cause and deliver me; **according to Your Word** give me life... [In other words, intervene ‘on my behalf, God] ...according to Your Word. Salvation is far from the wicked, for they do not seek Your statutes” (vs 154-155).

Let’s see how that still applies today. When Paul said that we are to ‘adhere to the sound words of Christ’ If you wanted to look up every place where it talks about:

- the Word of God
- the Word of the Lord
- His words
- Your words
- My words
- obey My voice

Just take that as a study, I guarantee it will take you quite a while to get through it, because there are literally pages of it in the concordances. Even what we’ve studied here, though we went into some depth in it, if we likened the whole thing to the iceberg I talked about, we probably got down another ten percent. There’s so much more to it, it’s incredible.

As I’ve said many times, the Word of God is like a sphere, not a string. You can take a sphere, and theoretically you can put in an innumerable number of lines going through that sphere. Everywhere there’s an intersection of those lines, the Word of God connects. So, you can liken that to putting the Word of God together correctly.

With an infinite number of lines, there is an infinite number of connections, which means that we're dealing with the Word of God inspired by the Spirit of God. Since God lives forever, that's why it's designed in that way.

There are so many people that claim to the Church of Philadelphia or Philadelphians, the point escapes too many people as to what it really means. I'm not saying that we are Philadelphians and others are whatever they may be. All I'm saying is let's see what this tells us concerning the Word of God.

Revelation 3:7: "And to the angel of the Church in Philadelphia, write: "These things says the Holy One, the One Who *is* true; the One Who has the key of David, Who opens and no one shuts, and Who shuts and no one opens. **I know your works...**" (vs 7-8). Let's understand something about *works*:

We are to have works, but those works are to be based and rooted in the love and grace of God. If we love and obey God what kind of works are we going to have? God *knows* them!

"...Behold, I have set before you an open door, and no one has the power to shut it because you have a little strength, and **have kept My Word...**" (v 8). That's how important the Word of God is.

"...and **have not denied My name**" (v 8). If you don't keep His Word, what are you doing? *You're denying His name!* The two go hand in hand.

Verse 9: "Behold, I will make those of the synagogue of Satan..." The great world establishment that runs the world, including financially, government—the whole system of the world.

"...who proclaim themselves to be Jews and are not, but do lie—behold, I will cause them to come and worship before your feet, and **to know that I have loved you.**" (v 9). What you need to realize is that the day will come; you can count on it! That day will come!

Verse 10: "Because you have kept the Word of My patience... [or endurance] ...I also will keep you from the time [hour] of temptation..." A lot of people think that this is the Great Tribulation. NO! The Great Tribulation is not an hour. The Great Tribulation is three and a half years. The temptation is the coming one-world government and the one-world religion; that you are going to be kept from being tempted to go into it.

- Why? *Because you kept the Word of God!*
- What does that do for you? *That tells you*

*what is true, and what is not true! That tells you what is Godly and what is not Godly!*

When it comes on the scene and there are 'great signs and miracles' that take place and the whole world is falling for it, going head-over-heels in love with it, it is going to be a thing that is going to sweep this world!

"...which *is* about to come upon **the whole world...**" (v 10). With the modern communication we have today, it's going to be *all the world!*

"...to try those who dwell on the earth" (v 10). There are many other things that are going to have to happen with this. There will be the two witnesses who come on the scene, and they will also witness against this system.

Verse 11: "Behold, I am coming quickly; **hold fast that which you have...**" What is it that they have? *The Word of God!* With that *the Spirit of God!* With that *the understanding of the Word of God!*

so that no one may take away your crown" (v 11). Why would he put that in there unless there were a lot of people out there trying to get you to change your ways from following the Word of God; in whatever little way it can start.

I remember that we gave a pretty sound warning about some of the things that were happening, of those who were denying Jesus Christ, in going to an afternoon, 14<sup>th</sup> Passover. We said, 'Watch out! Trouble is coming!' It has landed and they are in deep trouble! Why? *Because they let a man take from them the Truth concerning the Passover!*

So, the warning is there; it can apply to Sabbath, Holy Days, anything rooted in the Word of God. Why would you want to give up the Word of God anyway? What are you going to get in return? *The word of Satan!* If they are not:

1-Timothy 6:3: "If anyone teaches any different doctrine, and does not adhere to sound words, *even those* of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the doctrine *that is* according to Godliness, **he is proud and knows nothing.** Rather, he has a morbid attraction to questions and disputes over words, from which come envy, arguments, blasphemy, wicked suspicions, vain reasonings of men who have been corrupted in *their* minds and *are* destitute of the Truth—..." (vs 3-5). That's what happens to those who leave the Word of God and go out and have a 'religion.'

"...men who believe that gain is Godliness.

From such withdraw *yourself*" (v 5). Don't go out and associate with the great ecumenical thing and come along where we began: *service unites and doctrine—divides*—so therefore, you have your doctrine over here, there and everywhere.

What you're doing when you do that is accusing God of being double-minded. You're accusing God of being a liar, because He allows this one to have this practice over here—say a 15<sup>th</sup> Passover, and another person over here with a 14<sup>th</sup> Passover. One keeps Sabbath and another keeps Sunday. Then you can spread it out into the world. The Muslims keep Friday and the Buddhists keep no day.

See how important it is? *Yes! Doctrine does divide!* It should divide us from the world and separate us to God!

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) 1 Timothy 6:3
- 2) Matthew 24:4-5
- 3) 1 Timothy 6:4-5
- 4) 2 Corinthians 2:17
- 5) 2 Corinthians 4:2
- 6) 1 Samuel 15:22-23, 26
- 7) Jeremiah 8:5-9
- 8) Isaiah 5:20-24
- 9) Psalm 50:16-22
- 10) Matthew 16:6, 12
- 11) 2 Timothy 2:15, 14, 15-16
- 12) Jeremiah 23:21-32, 36
- 13) John 3:31-36
- 14) John 6:63
- 15) John 14:15, 21, 23-24
- 16) John 12:42-50
- 17) Psalm 12:1-6
- 18) Psalm 18:30-32
- 19) Psalm 138:1-2
- 20) Psalm 119:11, 16-17, 25, 28, 38, 41-43, 50
- 21) John 1:1
- 22) Psalm 119: 49, 58, 57, 65, 67, 74, 76, 77, 81-82, 89, 101, 105, 107, 116-117, 133
- 23) Romans 6:1-3, 11-12
- 24) Psalm 119: 133, 147, 154-155
- 25) Revelation 3:7-11
- 26) 1 Timothy 6:3-5

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Revelation 2; 3
- Matthew 7:21-23
- Acts 15
- Matthew 7:21-23

#### Also referenced:

#### Ecumenical Movement

([klausuren.de/inhalt/kategorie/englisch-1/ecumenical-movement](http://klausuren.de/inhalt/kategorie/englisch-1/ecumenical-movement))

#### Books:

*The New Age Bible Versions* by G. A. Riplinger  
*William Tyndale: A Biography* by David Daniell

FRC:bo

Transcribed: 2-23-15

## Pastoral Epistles VIII

### Purpose of the Church & Ministry #1

(2-Timothy)  
Fred R. Coulter

This is the purpose of the Church, the ministry and why God has called us and how that fits in with how the Church congregations and fellowships should be organized. The Pastoral Epistles are:

- 1<sup>st</sup>-2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy
- Titus
- Philemon

Plus what we find out of Acts and 1<sup>st</sup>-2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians. The things on how the Church has been structured according to the way God inspired the Apostle Paul to do it is the only model we have in the New Testament.

In it we see that there is a right balance between the local congregations with independents, plus connected with what Paul was doing and the other ministers who were with Paul. And he, when their were difficulties and problems could intervene directly into any of the local congregations by letter, by visit or by sending someone to help them understand their problems.

When you come to the Church at Corinth, just to show you some of the authority that the Apostle Paul had and used, and never at any time was it used in a way of a dictator ruling over people. The first part of the covenant that Jesus gave in Matt. 20 was that you shall not be like the princes of the Gentiles, which lorded over them, or the great ones who exercised authority upon them. He says, 'It shall not be so among you.' So, we find that the Apostle Paul did not do that either.

You can read 1<sup>st</sup>-2<sup>nd</sup> Corinthians and just see how the Apostle Paul went through explaining and inspiring, and then correcting, admonishing and ridiculing to bring them back to Christ. Since they were all enamored with all this false apostle that were coming along saying that they were Hebrews and they had seen Christ and were Israelites, indeed, Paul had to say, 'Hey, I am, too, but I don't want to be a fool and boast.'

Paul had explained his circumstances, how he had an infirmity or a weakness in the flesh, an angel of Satan came to buffet him so that he wouldn't be exalted above measure, because of the revelations that had been given to him. And the answer was, after he had besought the Lord three times to take it away, 'My grace is sufficient for you.' God is glorified in weakness. When we are

weak, then we are strong. That doesn't mean necessarily feeble physically. That means that we understand that the flesh has no spiritual strength whatsoever. Then we are

- strong in the Grace of God
- strong in the Spirit of God
- strong in the Truth of God

That's what the Apostle Paul was saying. Then he said:

2-Corinthians 12:11: "I have become a fool *in this* boasting. You have forced [compelled] me *to do so...* [because of all your strife, vanity and sins] ...when I ought to have been commended by you.... [rather than running after all these false apostles] ...For in no way was I inferior to those highly exalted **so-called apostles**—even if I am nothing."

These are hotshots, not talking about Peter or any of the other apostles of God. These are the false apostles referred to in 2-Cor. 11. They were coming along and saying, 'We have a better revelation than Paul.'

Read the book: *Primitive Christianity in Crisis* by Alan Knight. That will tell you who they were and what they were doing.

Verse 12: "Indeed, the signs of an apostle were demonstrated *by me* in all patience, in signs and wonders and miracles among you. For in what *way* was it that you were inferior to the other churches, except that I myself did not burden you? Forgive me this wrong" (vs 12-13). *All right, I'm going to trap you!*

They knew that God commanded tithes and offerings, but who were they giving to? *All these false apostles coming in!* Sound familiar? So, Paul said, 'All right, I'm going to be paid by other churches.' He called it *robbing them for wages*. 'I'm going to preach the true Gospel to you without cost in hopes that when you are converted you will understand what you need to do.' That's why he said, "...I myself did not burden you? Forgive me this wrong."

Verse 14: "Behold, a third time I am ready to come to you, and I will not burden you; for I do not seek what is yours, but you; for the children are not obligated to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children. Now, I will most happily

spend, and am willing to be totally spent, for your souls; although the more abundantly I love you, the less I am loved” (vs 14-15). That’s what happens to carnal people. They misunderstand it.

Verse 16: “Yet, even so, I did not burden you; but being crafty, I caught you with guile.” You fell right into the carnal trap—didn’t you?

Verse 17: “Did I make a gain of you by any of those whom I sent to you? I urged Titus *to go to you* and sent with *him our* brother. Did Titus make a gain of you?... [Did he come in and demand tithes and offerings?] ...Did we not walk in the same spirit *and* in the same steps? Again, do you think that we are making an excuse to you? We speak before God in Christ; and everything *we do*, beloved, *is* for your edification” (vs 17-19). I’m reading this to show you the authority that he had in the local churches. He did have authority. For what? *To teach, to help, to correct!*

Verse 20: “But I fear that when I come, perhaps I may find you *in a state* such as I do not wish, and I may be found by you such as you do not wish...” He’s laying it on the line: ‘I’m coming, folks, what are you going to do? Are you going to be adults; responsible Christians and solve your problems? What is it that you’re going to do?’

“...that *there may be* strifes, jealousies, indignations, contentions, evil speakings, whisperings, puffings up, commotions” (v 20)—which we’ve all experienced—have we not?

Verse 21: “*And* that when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and I shall grieve over many of those who have already sinned, and have not repented of the uncleanness and sexual immorality and licentiousness that they have practiced.” He laid down the warning! ‘You’ve got a chance, I’m coming,’

2-Corinthians 13:1: “*This is the* third time that I am coming to you. *In the* mouth of two or three witnesses every matter shall be established.” Did he follow Matt. 13? *Yes, he did!*

Verse 2: “I have previously told *you*, and I am telling you in advance the second time, as though I were present; but since I am absent now, I am writing to those who have continued to sin until now—and to all the rest—that if I come again, I will not spare.”

- How do you want me to come, folks?
- In meekness and love?

*Clear up your problems!* If not, “...I will not spare.”

Verse 3: “Since you seek a proof of Christ speaking through me (Who is not weak toward you,

but is powerful in you.” *Look, this guy can’t even speak, all mighty in letters.*

Verse 4: “For although He was crucified in weakness, yet, He lives by God’s power... [referring to Christ] ...and we are indeed weak in Him, but we shall live with Him by God’s power toward you), **examine yourselves to see whether you are in the faith; prove your own selves....**” (vs 4-5). *Don’t let me have to come and do it to you!*

What Paul is doing is showing that the exercise of authority has been in using the authority to admonish the brethren to correct their own problems. As we covered earlier, a person convinced against their will is of the same opinion still. You can’t force people. You’ve heard it: *You’ve got a bad attitude!* You wouldn’t dare say, ‘Yeah, and you caused it, Mr. Minister.’ You’d be rebellious!

Paul was just the opposite. This shows that they had choice. This show they had room and latitude to make a mistake. This also shows that they were responsible as individuals to correct their own mistakes. But if necessary if they wouldn’t do it, Paul would come and referee, but he would say, ‘Prove yourselves now! Look at yourselves before Christ.’

“...Don’t you *of your own selves* know that Jesus Christ is in you? Otherwise, you are reprobates” (v 5). Notice the correction and the pleading; notice the cynicism and admonishment so that they see the foolishness of their error. Not to criticize them and put them down, but to make them become mature and responsible for their actions.

You can always command things to be done, but you can never command responsibility. So, Paul is saying, ‘Look, you solve your own problems. I’ll help you in it, and I am coming.’

Verse 6: “But I hope that you will recognize that we are not reprobates. Now, I am praying to God *that* you do no evil; not that we may appear *to be* approved... [exalted] ...but that you may do what is right, even if we are *regarded* as reprobates” (vs 6-7). *Look, we’ll take the position of reprobates if you just correct yourselves!* Isn’t that amazing?

Verse 8: “For we do not have any power against the Truth, but *only* for the Truth.” Even if you sin, you’re verifying the Truth.

- that the Law is Truth
- that the Law is good
- that the Law is right

You can’t do anything against it. You may sin, but the Truth still stands.

But for the Truth, v 9: “And we rejoice when

we are weak and you are strong... [come on, be strong] ...for we are also praying for this... [we wish, we desire] ...—**even your perfection.**”

Doesn't that put us right back where we started. The purpose of the Church is *the perfecting of the saints!*

Verse 10: “For this cause, I am writing these things to you while I am absent, in order that when I am present I may not treat *you* with severity, according to the authority which the Lord has given me for edification and not for destruction. In conclusion, brethren, rejoice! Be perfected; be encouraged; be of the same mind; be at peace; and the God of love and peace shall be with you” (vs 10-11).

That's how Paul exerted his authority and shows his longsuffering, and shows that they were to be responsible as brethren for what they should do. Let's see how Paul also used his authority in teaching, as we saw in 1-Tim.:

- he commanded
- he charged
- he made Timothy responsible

Brethren, we're all responsible, and we're all accountable. If we all understand, won't things be a whole lot better. No one can live your life for you. With Christ *in you*, you can live the life that God wants you to. That's what God wants.

2-Timothy 1:1: “Paul, *an* apostle of Jesus Christ by *the* will of God, according to *the* promise of life which *is* in Christ Jesus, to Timothy, *my* beloved son: Grace, mercy *and* peace from God *the* Father and Christ Jesus our Lord. I am grateful to God—Whom I have been serving from *the days of my* forefathers with a pure conscience—because I never fail to remember you in my supplications night and day” (vs 1-3).

Remember, he probably was in prison at this point. He was in prison several times, but I think this is his second prison term that he was doing.

Verse 4: “As I recall your tears, *I am* longing to see you, so that I may be filled with joy; when I remember the unfeigned faith *that is* in you, which first dwelt in your grandmother Lois and in your mother Eunice—and I am convinced that *it dwells* in you also. For this reason, I admonish you to **stir up the gift of God that is in you by the laying on of my hands**” (vs 4-6).

{Note 1-Tim. 4:14, that there was the laying on of hands of the eldership and Paul was leading in the laying on of hands with it. This is the gift of God for being an elder, and serving, preaching and

teaching.}

Verse 7: “For God has not given us a spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of sound-mindedness.” That's what God has given to us, all of us!

Verse 8: “Therefore, you should not be ashamed of the testimony of our Lord...” Never be ashamed of the Truth or for what Christ has done for you. You're to be the salt of the earth, the light of the world. *All of us!*

“...nor *of* me His prisoner; but jointly suffer with *me for the sake of* the Gospel, according to *the* power of God... [he's writing to Timothy as an apostle to an elder] ...Who has saved us and called *us* with a Holy calling...” (vs 8-9). Being an elder is a Holy calling, and it is a covenant that is based on the love of God, based on the foundation of Christ.

“...—not according to our works...” (v 9). What we've done, what we are, who we are. God could care less about personality. God could care less about education or whatever. If you love God and you are faithful, God can teach you, educate you and empower you with His Spirit. You have *His* love and *His* Truth, which all comes from Him! That is a key for any serving elder, or anyone who is preaching, that you rely totally on Christ “...**not according to our works...**” God didn't have to call us, but He did because He loves us.

“...but according to His own purpose and grace, which *was* given us in Christ Jesus before the ages of time; but has now been revealed by the appearing of our Savior Jesus Christ, Who has annulled death...” (vs 9-10). Do you understand that, brethren? It doesn't matter if you die, because you're going to live again. He's annulled it.

“...and has brought to light *eternal* life and incorruptibility through the Gospel” (v 11).

I know that I'm reading this, but I want you to *catch the power of the words* that God has inspired from the Greek. I want you to understand, for any of you who are speaking and teaching, ask God to help you teach the Scriptures. When you do, to read them like you speak. Then you will catch the sense of God's inspiration of the Scriptures even more.

Verse 11: “Unto which I was ordained a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of *the* Gentiles... [he's all three] ...for which cause I am also suffering these things; nevertheless, I am not ashamed.... [he's in prison] ...For I know Whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He has the power to keep what I have committed *to Him* for that day. **Hold as the standard for doctrine the sound**

**words that you heard from me**” (vs 11-13).

We’ve seen all the way through that these doctrines are important, and they are the Word of God. Doctrine is important! It is true, *doctrine does divide, and Christ intended it to divide!* To divide you from the error, to divide you into His Truth. So, if any man comes preaching a gospel of politics, the doctrine divides, so doctrine is not important. *NO!* That is a false teaching!

“...in the faith and love that *are* in Christ Jesus. **Guard the good thing that was committed to you by the Holy Spirit** that is dwelling in us” (vs 13-14). We have a responsibility—individually and as elders:

- to guard the Word of God
- to guard the Truth of God
- to fight the false doctrines that come up and meeting them head-on and do not be afraid of them
  - ✓ Christ did unto death!
  - ✓ The Apostles did unto death!

Remember what I wrote in the book *Lord, What Should I Do?* For all those who were worried about their friends in whatever church they may be, ‘You need to consider this: You’re better off standing alone with the Truth than standing in the congregation of sinners and compromising.’ That’s what Paul did!

Verse 15: “You know this, that all those who *are* in Asia have rejected me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermogenes. May the Lord grant mercy to the household of Onesiphorus because he frequently refreshed me and was not ashamed of my chains” (vs 15-16).

**He didn’t say**, ‘Oh, look at that, that Paul, I knew he was up to something. Look, he’s in prison and in chains. I won’t even go to visit him; I am so ashamed of him that I disown him.’

Verse 17: “For when he was in Rome, he searched for me very diligently and found *me*. May the Lord grant to him that he may find mercy from the Lord in that day and how much he served *me* in Ephesus, you know very well” (vs 17-18).

Remember, he’s writing this knowing that he’s going to die. These are the last words of the Apostle Paul, and to Timothy; profound words! Instruction inspired of God in a very desperate situation was at hand.

2-Timothy 2:1: “Therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that *is* in Christ Jesus. And the things that you have heard from me among many witnesses, these *things* commit to faithful men, such

as will be competent to teach others also” (vs 1-2). That’s what we’re trying to do here in the Christian Biblical Church of God.

What Wayne Stenhouse does in how he handles the monthly schedule of sermons, tapes (CDs) and videos: he takes one Sabbath a month he takes one sermon I have done in the past and listens to it and then he brings his own sermon covering the same thing. I said to him, ‘You know, I never thought of it, but that’s doing exactly what this is doing here. We don’t have a college, and I can’t be there in person, so if you listen to the sermons and use them from that point of view, I am teaching you, and you can teach the brethren. If you’re faithful and confident, and able to teach—which you are—then you can grow in grace and knowledge and be able to teach with conviction, truth, strength and power, too.

It’s God’s Spirit that does it. And that we all grow into the ability to inspire the brethren. When days get going and are tough and rough and people are down and discouraged, you don’t inspire them by ‘beating them over the head’ and ‘knocking them down’ with every sin that there is. *You inspire them! Uplift them!* Pray about that and ask God to help you with it. *He will!* We’re all nothing but just dust of the earth. If God could use a jackass, surely He can use us.

Verse 3: “You, therefore, endure hardship as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. No one who is serving as a soldier becomes involved in civilian pursuits, so that he may please him who enlisted him as a soldier. Also, if anyone strives *to win* in the athletic games, he is not crowned unless he has competed lawfully. *Moreover*, it is necessary for the husbandman to labor before partaking of the fruits” (vs 3-6).

You’ve got to plow the ground. You’ve got to hoe it and dung it. You’ve got to water and nurture it, and it’s got to grow. Then it has to have the fruit. You don’t eat the tomato the day that you put the seed in the ground, you’ve got to labor first.

We’ve been laboring. Let me tell you what God is going to grant us to have, and that is when we become more known publicly we are going to be armed to the teeth with:

- booklets
- doctrine
- books
- teachings
- series
- Bible translation

There are going to be people who are going to wonder how on earth was this done, and who are

these people to do it. We are consider to be:

- the rebellious
- the weak
- the off casts

In that sense we join the Apostle Paul—don't we? So, if God can use us, He will. But when He does, let's not get exalted.

Verse 7: "Give careful consideration to the things *that* I am telling you..." Couple that with all the charges, commands] ...and may the Lord give you understanding in all things." He's saying to Timothy, 'Look, *you* have got to do it.'

Verse 8: "Remember *that* Jesus Christ, of *the* seed of David, *was* raised from among *the* dead according to my Gospel; for which I am suffering hardship, *even* to the point of being imprisoned like a criminal..." (vs 8-9).

Trust me, today when you are arrested you are guilty, because they've changed the law enough through court cases that you now have to prove your innocence in too many cases. Know that there are a lot of corrupt police out there who do entrap innocent people, and send them to prison to cover their own sins. So, Paul was sent off like a criminal.

"...but the Word of God has not been chained. Because of this, I endure all things for the sake of the elect in order that they may obtain *the* salvation that *is* in Christ Jesus with eternal glory" (vs 9-10). So, he kept his mind on the whole purpose of why he was serving the brethren, and why God had called them.

Verse 11: "This is a faithful saying: If we have died together with *Him*, we shall also live together with *Him*; if we endure, we shall also reign together with *Him*; if we deny *Him*, He will also deny us; if we are unfaithful, He remains faithful—He cannot deny Himself. See that *they* remain mindful of these things, **earnestly charging them...**" (vs 11-14). There's some more of the authority that God grants to an elder. ***Authority is for edification, not destruction.*** You only use the authority that is necessary, that is warranted by the circumstances.

Example: You don't get rid of a fly by killing it with a 105 Howitzer and destroying the house. You don't use the authority necessary for hard problems, for small problems. You don't have to go in and correct every problem. Give it some time; let the people work it out. Pray for them that God would work on their mind. God will take care of it.

But when it comes time, when it has to do

with doctrine and effects other people "...**earnestly charging them in the sight of the Lord** not to argue over words..." (v 14). That's why you have to *prove all things* by the Scriptures.

"...that are not profitable in any way, *but which lead to the* subverting of those who hear" (v 14). Did that happen concerning 'ben ha arbayim' and counting Pentecost, the calendar things. Did it subvert people? *Yes, it did!* That's why we're under obligation to show the Truth.

Verse 15: "Diligently *study* to show yourself approved unto God..." An elder has to study all the time; all the time apply yourself to the Word of God. You know how you prepare sermons? *All the time!*

- you study the Word of God
- you think on the Word of God
- you see it in action where you live, where you work with people
- you see it on television

Let God's Spirit exercise you in that.

"...a workman who does not *need to be* ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of the Truth" (v 15). There is a wrong way to divide the Word of Truth. You can deceitfully use the Scriptures. You can corrupt the Word of God. You can prove anything out of the Bible if you *wrongly* divide the Word of God. But if you *rightly divide the Word of God*, you'll understand the Truth. That's an amazing thing that God has done in inspiring the Bible. ***The same book that confuses those who are rebellious, and enlightens those who love God!*** Isn't that amazing?

Verse 16: "But avoid profane and vain babblings because they will *only* give rise to more ungodliness." Haven't you seen that happen, too? A little change in the doctrine here, a little change of a doctrine there, add in a little leaven, stir it up and let it grow, and you have more ungodliness!

Verse 17: "And their words will eat away at the body like gangrene; of whom are Hymeneus and Philetus, who have gone astray from the Truth, claiming that the resurrection has already taken place..." (vs 17-18). They are not even 40 years removed from the resurrection of Christ, and they're already saying that it's over and done.

"...and are destroying the faith of some. Nevertheless, the foundation of God stands firm..." (vs 18-19).

Verse 21: "Therefore, if anyone has purged himself from these... [the vessels of dishonor (v 20)] ...he will be a vessel for honor, having been sanctified and *made* serviceable to the Master, *and*

having been prepared for every good work.” What you do today in studying prepares you for tomorrow. What you do for tomorrow prepares you for the next day. And accumulative over a period of months and years then you are ready.

How long did God work with Moses before He used him? *He said to tend sheep for 40 years!* Though he was a great general and heir apparent to Pharaoh. Then he was ready. What did the Apostle Paul have to go through? What have we had to go through? *If we’re preparing we’ll be ready!* If we’re not prepared we’ll be like the five foolish virgins. Oop! The last minute, no oil!

Verse 22: “But flee youthful lusts...” Oh that some evangelists would do that even their old age would be helpful.

“...and pursue righteousness, faith, love *and* peace with those who are calling on the Lord out of a pure heart. But foolish and ignorant speculations reject...” (vs 22-23). I get them every week. I get things sent to me all the time. Some of them I answer, some of them I don’t. Some of them I have Jim Hyles answer, some of them go into the waste can. Some I remember and bring a sermon on it at a later date. But Paul says:

“...reject knowing that they engender arguments. Now, it is obligatory *that* a servant of the Lord not be argumentative...” (vs 23-24)—for the sake of being argumentative. They always pick things apart!

“...but gentle toward all, competent to teach, forbearing, in meekness correcting those who set themselves in opposition...” (vs 24-25). Help them to understand in meekness. Sometimes that difficult to do.

“...if perhaps God may grant them repentance unto acknowledging of *the* Truth, and *that* they may wake up *and escape* from the devil’s snare, who have been taken captive by him to *do* his will” (vs 25-26).

I tell you what, brethren, these words of God are powerful. Paul wrote better than I can speak. But if, with the Spirit of God, we can grasp spiritually what he is saying, and understand what lies ahead of us, then we will accomplish what God wants us to, and understand the Word of God even more.

2-Timothy 3:10: “But you have closely followed my doctrine, conduct, purpose, faith, patience, love, endurance... [because he was with them much of the time] ...persecutions *and* sufferings—such as happened to me in Antioch, in Iconium, *and* in Lystra....” (vs 10-11). You read what the Apostle Paul went through. He could glory

in tribulations and persecutions better than we can.

I’ve often thought: I have a hard time glorying in tribulation. I have a hard time being happy in a trial. The reason being is because God gave him that gift to do so was compensation for those he killed and injured before he was called; when Paul took them up to the high priest into Jerusalem. He knew what he did to them; he knew how vicious that he was to them. He knew that he was described as a boar hog with its tusks rooting up the ground, which was then likened unto the Church.

So, when he was stoned, he got up and went on. He said, ‘Thank You, God, that I am counted worthy to suffer the persecution of Christ.’ Timothy was there and saw it.

“...*You know* what sort of persecutions I endured...” (v 11). I tell you what, we get upset if we’re served cold toast.

“...and the Lord delivered me out of them all” (v 11). God will help you! God will deliver you! ***All things work together for good for them who love God and are called according to His purpose!*** That is absolutely a true statement. When you are down to the lowest and you feel no hope, cling to that Scripture! God will deliver you!

(go to the next track)

We’ve all had our troubles, but nothing like they had. The Proverb says, ‘When you faint in the day of adversity you have little strength.’ Always turn to Psalms 34, it’s what’s important; remember this, and this only happens when:

Psalms 34:4: “I sought the LORD...” you seek Him in these times of troubles of difficulties, whatever the circumstances of your life may be you seek God. You’re all going to have a trial or difficulty that you will come to the point that you will say, ‘God, I don’t know! *You know!*’ ***That’s where God wants you to be!***

Not that He joys in the trial and suffering that you’re going through, but He joys in the fact that you turned to Him and admit that you don’t know which way is up or down. ‘God, please show me!’ *He will!*

“...and He answered me...” (v 4). God is there to hear. Remember what David did when he thought that God wouldn’t hear, he said, ‘O God, hear me!’ *God did!*

“...and delivered me from all my fears” (v 4). You don’t have to worry or be fearful, God will deliver you. Remember, where there is fear there is torment, but *perfect love casts out fear!*

Verse 5: “They looked to Him and were

radiant; and their faces were not ashamed. This poor man cried, and the LORD heard, and saved him out of all his troubles” (vs 5-6). God will deliver you out of all your troubles.

Verse 7: “The angel of the LORD encamps around those who fear Him and delivers them. O taste and see that the LORD is good; blessed is the man who takes refuge in Him” (vs 7-8). That’s why we have these things come upon us.

We read the book of Revelation and all those horrible events that are going to come—and they are going to come—and when we preach about it, please understand that this is not to instill in you *fear*, but this is to give you hope and strength that you know that

- God is going to fulfill His Word
- God is going to help you
- God is going to strengthen you

Whether you go to a place of safety or not; that’s not the question. If you are right with God and you die in the faith, or you’re martyred in the faith—which one day that will come... There are some true Christians and many professing Christians who are being killed by Muslims and imprisoned in China. The only reason that God has given us faith, time and peace here is so that we may *work*. ***That work is Christ in you!*** That you grow in:

- strength
- character
- faith
- love
- ability

—and be made a vessel to serve God, because He’s going to give you eternal life to live forever and ever in glory. That’s what God has called us to. He’ll deliver us out of all.

Just imagine that some of those who have been martyred, that when they’re resurrected, what they’re going to think. Just imagine the joy that they’re going to have when the angel say, ‘Come here, let’s go on up to the Sea of Glass, my friend.’ *Oh, I’m going to see the Lord?* ‘Yes, you’re going to see the Lord.’ *The last thing I remember is that they lopped off my head, I saw the guillotine blade coming down right on me! I’m alive!* ‘Yes, you are, are you ready to meet the Lord?’

Verse 14: “Depart from evil and do good; seek peace and pursue it. The eyes of the LORD are upon the righteous, and His ears are open to their cry.... [God is there!] ...The face of the LORD is against those who do evil, to cut off the memory of them from the earth” (vs 14-16).

Remember, the day for the evil person is coming, though they are prospering before your very eyes right now.

Verse 17: “The righteous cry, and **the LORD hears, and delivers them out of all their troubles.**” God delivers us! He has and will continue.

Verse 18: “The LORD is near to the broken-hearted and saves those who are of a contrite spirit. Many are the afflictions of the righteous, **but the LORD delivers him out of them all**” (vs 18-19).

- all your fears
- all your troubles
- all your afflictions

***God will deliver you!***

- be it whether you are healed in the flesh
- be it whether you are saved from catastrophe
- be it whether you are delivered from those who are persecuting you

*or*

- be it whether you die in the faith

***God is going to save you out of it all!*** He delivered Paul out of them all, and he said that while he was in chains, in prison; he says, ‘I’m ready to be offered.’

- that’s why God is perfecting the saints
- that’s why God is shaking the Church

All of those who have been baptized 40 years, 30 years, 25 years, 20 years, that they can wake up and seek God. God has something great for them, a perfection for them. He wants them to be perfected and ready for the resurrection. That’s what God wants for every one of us.

- we don’t have time to wait
- we don’t have time to lollygag around
- we don’t have time to play socials on the Sabbath and play pitsy-patsy and politics with rank and authority with church members

He’s got everything set before us.

2-Timothy 3:12: “And indeed, everyone who desires to live Godly in Christ Jesus shall be persecuted.... [Don’t worry, it’s going to happen!] ...But wicked men and imposters shall become worse and worse, deceiving *others* and being deceived *themselves*” (vs 12-13). And you can see it on cable news 24 hours a day in any election.

Verse 14: “But *as for* you, continue in the things that you did learn and were assured of, knowing from whom you have learned *them*; and that from a child you have known the Holy Writings...” (vs 14-15).

We're all to know the Scriptures. I believe that in times of peace and prosperity we know it's not going to last forever. Just like the Stock Market, every time it goes up, they always get euphoria and think that it's going to go on and on, and they predict the Dow and then one day, BOOM!

Same thing with the Word of God! In the days of peace and prosperity we have the Word of God, and you better take that time to know the Bible, study the Bible, to realize the Word of God. To exercise ourselves there unto; to let God's Spirit inspire us to do it. We have the greatest gift from God: *His Word! His Spirit! And time and peace to do it!*

Know the Holy Scriptures "...which are able to make you wise unto salvation through faith, which *is* in Christ Jesus. All Scripture *is* God-breathed and *is* profitable for doctrine, for conviction, for correction, for instruction in righteousness" (vs 15-16).

God wants you to have all of that. If there's any one thing that God wants us to have it is *the conviction of what we believe to the very depths of our being!* No one can gainsay that. They may try, but *God is Judge!*

Some people call me hardheaded. I'll accept that. I'm willing to listen when things need to be changed and worked on. But when I'm confronted with people that want to change the Word God, that want to alter the doctrines and truths that we have and carry brethren back into this world, into the ecumenical swill of the harlot dressed in purple and scarlet, with the golden cup of her abominations that she's feeding to all nations, and have the brethren drink out of that, *I get upset! I will be as hardheaded...* I pray that God would give me a forehead of flint and give you a forehead of flint; just like He did to Jeremiah and Ezekiel.

Christ said that when the Son of man comes, 'will He find the faith on the earth?' Brethren, if it can't be with us, and the people of God, **where will it be found?** *It won't be!*

Verse 16: "All Scripture *is* God-breathed and *is* profitable for doctrine, for conviction, for correction, for instruction in righteousness so that the man of God may be complete, fully equipped for every good work" (vs 16-17).

*That is for the elders, and that is how you are to treat the Word of God in preaching and teaching and being able to help, convict and uplift the brethren!* There are some powerful words here:

2-Timothy 4:1: "**I charge you**... [Paul said in one place, 'I solemnly charge you'] ... therefore,

in the sight of God..." I take this personally. If God inspired Paul to write this to Timothy, then God inspired it to be preserved for every elder that God places in the service of His Church.

"...even the Lord Jesus Christ, Who is ready to judge *the* living and *the* dead at His appearing and His kingdom: **Preach the Word!....**" (vs 1-2). Very simple:

- you're to know it
- you're to live by it
- you're to teach it
- you're to explain it
- you're to preach it

"...Be urgent in season and out of season..." Does eternal life ever get old? *No!* If we do it that way, every Sabbath is going to be tremendous! God will be there fellowshipping with us, inspiring all of us, not just the one who doing the teaching or preaching, but the ones who are doing the hearing—the ones who are learning—that you may be inspired. God delights in that.

I know that God is doing that right now in this very room! We can know and understand. Have you ever gone to the Feast and never hear the Feast spoken of? What happens? *They lose the knowledge of it!*

Then they say, 'Brethren, we have liberty in Christ. You all come to the Feast of Unleavened Bread and we're going to have a nice spread here for the potluck. For those of you who don't believe that you have to eat unleavened bread, we'll have some leavened bread. For those of you who believe that have to have unleavened bread, you can have that, too. We'll just all be cozy and warm together in our sin and ecumenism.'

*That's not being* "...urgent in season and out of season..." When the Holy Days come, we are ***commanded*** to preach the Holy Days. God will inspire you so that you will say—preach and teach—what's necessary, because He's commanded you to.

"...convict..." (v 2). That's what I hope that God's Spirit will do with you: *convict you* with determination and the will and power of the Spirit of God ***that you be strengthened:***

- in might
- in your mind
- in the love of God

That you can look at all the things that you have gone through, and will go through, *as nothing*, except those things necessary for you to receive eternal life and the reward that God has waiting for you:

- that He is making
- that He is building
- that He is preparing
- that He's going to give you

with a new name that you can live in New Jerusalem forever.

“...rebuke, encourage, with all patience and doctrine. For there shall come a time when they will not tolerate sound doctrine... [we've seen that, too] ...but according to their own lusts they shall accumulate to themselves *a great number of teachers*, having ears itching *to hear what satisfies their cravings*” (vs 2-3). I added that last phrase, but that is implied in the meaning of the Greek. Why heap to yourselves a lot teachers who are going to teach you a lot of things to titillate your lusts.

Verse 4: “They shall turn away their own ears from the Truth...” Haven't you seen all the brethren whom you knew, who were keeping the Sabbath and Holy Days with you, that now that they have swallowed the lie of Sunday-keeping and **turned their ears away from the Truth, and will not hear?**

Some brethren have said that when they see those who have done that, meet them on the street, and they look them in the eye, that something has changed. That's sad, but that's what happens just as sure as there is the law of life, just as sure as there is the law of gravity, and **just as sure as you turn your ear away from hearing the Truth so will you lose it!**

“...and they shall be turned aside unto myths. But *as for* you, be vigilant in all things, endure hardships, do *the* work of an evangelist; fully carry out your ministry. For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my departure is at hand” (vs 4-6).

It's almost like in writing this, you could hear the footsteps of the guards coming down the corridor to come to his cell to lead him out chained to be killed. He still had some things he needed to do; it didn't happen right then, but you get the feeling of it there.

Verse 7: “I have fought a good fight; I have finished the course; I have kept the faith. From this time forward, a crown of righteousness is laid up for me, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me in that day—and not to me only, but also to all who love His appearing.... [there was some work he had to finish] ...Be diligent to come to me quickly... [before I die] ...for Demas has forsaken me, having loved this present age, and has gone to Thessalonica; Crescens, to Galatia; Titus, to Dalmatia” (vs 7-10).

That doesn't mean that they left the faith, but they went to these other areas.

Verse 11: “Only Luke is with me. Get Mark *and* bring him with you, because he is profitable to me for *the* ministry of the Word.” Mark was the one who helped finalize Paul's part of the New Testament. Whereas, before, Paul had rejected Mark saying, ‘This man doesn't want to work.’ Paul and Barnabas had a big fight over it, and Barnabas took Mark and went off in a huff. So, Paul had taken Timothy, but now he says to bring Mark.

Verse 12: “But I have sent Tychicus to Ephesus. When you come, bring the chest...” (vs 12-13)—a box covered with a garment; in that box is where they kept the pages of the writings that became the New Testament for which Paul had his part in doing.

Paul knew that his mission was to finish writing and completing the Word of God. That was went on from Paul, by Mark, to Peter. Peter then added what he had, and later that was sent on to John and to the elder of which Timothy was one there in Ephesus and whoever remained of the apostles still living, where they finished and canonized the New Testament for us. *They preserved it, brethren!*

***It wasn't the figment of the imagination*** of believers 400 years later under the auspices and guidance of pagan priests who professed Christ, which became the Catholic Church. God never entrusted that to them! They would never have been faithful in handling the Word of God. That's what this is all about here.

“...When you come, bring the chest that I left in Troas with Carpus, and the books—especially the parchments.... [he had more to write] ...Alexander the coppersmith did many evil things against me. May the Lord reward him according to his works. You also be on guard against him because he vehemently opposed our words. During my first defense, no one stood with me; instead, everyone deserted me. (*I pray that God will not lay it to their charge.*) But the Lord stood by me and strengthened me, so that through me the proclamation might be fully made, and all the Gentiles might hear *the Gospel*; and I was delivered out of *the* lion's mouth. And the Lord will deliver me from every wicked deed and will preserve *me* for His heavenly kingdom; to Whom *be* the glory into the ages of eternity. Amen” (vs 13-18).

***Some powerful instructions for Timothy, which is preserved for all elders for all time! So that we're all on the same foundation of Christ! So that we can serve the brethren and the brethren can***

serve others. Paul always included the brethren with him. He said ‘we’ and ‘the brethren with me.’

What God wants us to do is do the things the way that He has instructed in His Word. Every other way has failed. He does not want us to bring the means, structure and devices of the world into the Church of God. The Church of God is a *spiritual organism*. God is perfecting the character of the saints, and that character involves:

- responsibility
- accountability
- diligence to apply yourself

All of us together. What we do in *walking in faith* is:

- we don’t know what God wants
- we don’t how long we have to the end
- we have a great deal more time
- we may have very little time

But whatever the time is, we need to be busy doing what God wants us to do.

- He will help us!
- He will bless us!
- He will inspire us!

If we are prepared for every good work that He wants us to do—whatever it is—He’ll open the door and make it known. When He does, we’ll walk through it. God has closed the door of radio and television, because you can’t really preach the Truth on that any longer; it’s all censored. You either preach a watered-down gospel or you don’t buy time.

We do have the Internet, with websites; that gives us an opportunity. How far that will go, I don’t know, it depends on what we do. But we want to keep the website vibrant, alive, teaching and preaching the Word of God. We have links to certain things, but we don’t want to get it bogged down in things pertaining to other people or churches which have yet to led to the understanding that God has led us. That’s not trying to say that we’re exclusivists, because we’re not.

That is saying that we need to really preach the Word of God the way that the Word of God has led us to do, and not be encumbered with the burdened of other people who do not understand it the way God has given us the understanding.

There will be people out there—and pray about it because it’s a big wide world—that God will inspire the ones that He wants to come and visit the website. We don’t know who visits the websites—we don’t know if they’re friend or foe—but we are getting responses.

Matthew 22:1: “And again Jesus answered and spoke to them in parables, saying, ‘The Kingdom of Heaven is compared to a man *who was* a king, who made a wedding feast for his son, and sent his servants to call those who had been invited to the wedding feast; but they refused to come.... [the Jews] ...Afterwards he sent out other servants, saying ‘Say to those who have been invited, ‘Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and the fatted beasts are killed, and all things *are* ready. Come to the wedding feast.’” But they paid no attention and went away, one to his farm, and another to his business. And the rest, after seizing his servants, insulted and killed *them*. Now, when the king heard *it*, he became angry; and he sent his armies *and* destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city” (vs 1-7). That happened to Jerusalem.

Verse 8: “Then he said to his servants, ‘The wedding feast indeed is ready, but those who were invited were not worthy; therefore, go into the well-traveled highways, and invite all that you find to the wedding feast’” (vs 8-9). Go out and do it.

God will have to open the door and make it possible; if that’s what God wants us to do, He’ll open the door.

Verse 10: “And after going out into the highways, those servants brought together everyone that they found, both good and evil; and the wedding feast was filled with guests.” For the sake of the parable, obviously, this cannot be complete in the resurrection. Someone who does not have on the wedding garments, or have the garments of the guests, is not going to be resurrected to be in the first resurrection.

This parable is designed to give the understanding that there will be some who will not complete it. So therefore, the rest of this parable cannot be applied directly, but the literal sense of its meaning, for not being properly clothed, is true.

Verse 11: “And when the king came in to see the guests, *he* noticed a man there who was not dressed in ***proper attire*** for *the* wedding feast...” The righteousness of the saints. What did God say of the Laodiceans? *You’re naked! You don’t have any clothes on!*

Verse 12: “And he said to him, ‘Friend, how did you enter here without a garment *fit* for *the* wedding feast?’ But he had no answer. Then the king said to the servants, ‘Bind his hands and feet, *and* take him away, and cast *him* into the outer darkness.’....” (vs 12-13). This part of the parable is applied at the second resurrection of the incorrigible wicked. You are incorrigible and wicked if you turn down the call of God and do not prepare yourself.

“...There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few *are* chosen” (vs 13-14).

You see, I think the day is coming that God is going to say, ‘You go into the highways and byways and the hedgerows, and you preach the Gospel and tell them that God is calling you to eternal life. God is calling you to repent of your sins and to turn to Him and get out of your misery and wretchedness that you’re in, in this world.’

- It’s not going to be to the rich!
- It’s not going to be to the elite!
- ***It’s going to be to the lowest that are in society, because they are miserable and brokenhearted!***

*God will save them, but we have to prepared for whenever that day comes! May God fill you with His Spirit, with His love, and with His dedication and purpose!*

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) 2 Corinthians 12:11-21
- 2) 1 Corinthians 13:1-11
- 3) 2 Timothy 1:1-18
- 4) 2 Timothy 2:1-19, 21-26
- 5) 2 Timothy 3:10-11
- 6) Psalm 34:4-8, 14-19
- 7) 2 Timothy 3:12-17
- 8) 2 Timothy 4:1-18
- 9) Matthew 22:1-14

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Matthew 20
- 2 Corinthians 11
- Matthew 13
- 1-Timothy 4:14
- 2 Timothy 2:20

Also referenced: Books:

- *Primitive Christianity in Crisis* by Alan Knight
- *Lord, What Should I Do?* by Fred R. Coulter

FRC:bo  
Transcribed: 2-23-15

## Pastoral Epistles IX Purpose of the Church & Ministry #2 (Titus)

Fred R. Coulter

I want to review just a little bit so that we understand that all who serve as elders, who are overseers, keep the perspective correct and that we all understand that any elder/overseer is a steward of God.

- it's not a badge of reward
  - it's not a badge of authority
- though there is authority that all elders have, that is given in the Word of God
- but that they are in a special covenant with God

This is what they have to understand.

Acts 20:28: "Take heed, therefore, to yourselves..." That's one of the most important things that an elder needs to do:

- to take heed to himself
  - to teach himself
  - to yield to God
- don't get all caught up in:*
- vanity
  - authority
  - running and controlling people's lives

The job that Christ has given to the elders is to teach the brethren that *they* become responsible, that *they* live their lives before God. The elder is to teach and give counsel, to anoint when there's sickness, to be able to give leadership to the brethren in a right way. That is the leadership of the Holy Spirit of God and the Word of God to serve the brethren. That is all included in "Take heed, therefore, to yourselves..."

"...and to all the flock, among which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers..." (v 28). It's something that comes from God, though the flock also has to approve of those who are elders so that we don't have men coming along that just because they're good speakers they are made elders. Just because they have a great personality that now they are made elders.

It has to be that you see and know that they *love God first, that they feed the flock, they feed the sheep*, and all of those things are necessary before one has hands laid on them to be an elder who is an overseer.

"...to feed the Church of God, which He purchased with His own blood" (v 28). This is where the covenant is. The covenant is with God because

here is the blood, which is necessary, that has made those who are elders overseers and they have a charge from God. Part of the things they are to do is not only watch themselves, but they are to watch the flock.

Verse 29: "For I know this: that after my departure grievous wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock." They have to guard against wolves coming in.

That's why we have it now that if someone comes from another Church of God organization who has been an elder there, we do not automatically accept their eldership and transfer it right on over into the Christian Biblical Church of God. We have to know by their fruits and by the approval of the congregation

Also, if a man has been ordained as an elder, when he comes to fellowship with us and takes a backseat and sits down, that's fine. If God does not raise up brethren that he serves, then he must consider that his eldership was only in the other church and has no validity with any of the fellowship groups or congregations of the Christian Biblical Church of God. Or, in the case of one man that we went ahead and just recognized his eldership—years ago—before we understood what God wanted us to do, and instead of brethren being raised up for him to serve, the brethren told him that they didn't want to hear you speak, 'we don't want you being an elder over us.' All right, then he is not an elder with the Christian Biblical Church of God.

Verse 30: "And from among your own selves... [those who do not take heed to themselves] ...men will rise up speaking perverse things..." Today there is not excuse having divergent doctrines when we have the whole Word of God, and we've had many doctrinal disputes through the years, that if we haven't gone through to prove all of these things, then we haven't learned anything, yet. You will have more strength of God's Word and more understanding of the Word of God so that these things won't happen.

Not only is it the responsibility of elders, but it's also the responsibility of those who are the brethren to not let these things occur. In the event that they see these things happening with an elder—just like they had to approve him to be ordained or re-confirmed—they could also come to him and say,

‘Look, we as a congregation or fellowship group perceive this, which is not of the fruit of the Holy Spirit. ‘If you do not change this, if you do not serve us the way God wants you to, then we can say we no longer want you to be an elder to serve us.’

This then will be the self-purging devices that the congregation and the elders combine. Just like with us here, there are many things that you bring up and you say to me.

This will give a proper balance in being able to minimize those men who would rise up “...to draw away disciples after themselves” (v 30), or rise up and say, ‘I have a mission from God’ and they don’t. Also, in the past we’ve had it where ministers in our past church experience would come in and destroy a local congregation so the church hierarchy says, ‘What are we going to do with this man, he’s upset the church.’ *Well, we’ll transfer him to another church.* So, they let him go and destroy another church!

I know of one man, in his travels in the Worldwide Church of God probably is solely responsible for destroying at least ten congregations. Now then, with the Christian Biblical Church of God, if an elder moves to another city, if there is a congregation or fellowship group there, then they must approve him themselves to be an elder to serve them. It’s not an automatic transfer over just because you have been made an elder to serve the congregation here, that does not necessarily mean you will serve a congregation there.

However, if you have the fruits of the Holy Spirit and you have been doing what God has wanted, and if you honor the covenant with Jesus Christ and God the Father as an elder or overseer, chances are you will be approved by them, in whatever period of time they need to get to know you and be assured that you are an elder.

Verse 31: “Watch, therefore, remembering that *for* three years I ceased not to admonish each one night and day with tears.” Paul warned him for three years. What is our church experience that we can learn from, for how many years we can look back and see that God was warning us, but we didn’t have a clue. We need to learn from those years. If, after three years, they still didn’t get the point, then we, after the years of experience that we have, still don’t get the point, then we’re in trouble, indeed!

### How is an elder to conduct himself?

After the fiasco of Mrs. Zebedee bring James and John to Jesus to say, ‘I want my sons to sit on your right and left hand’—which was a political maneuver instigated by mother. It sounds a little bit

like Rebecca and Jacob. Jacob would have received the blessing anyway, because it was prophesied, but in order for it to look like this was done by men, God allowed the deception. Jacob came in with the goat-hair on the back of his neck so he would smell and appear like Esau. Jacob was punished and had deception brought upon him so that when he bargained for Rachel he got Leah and then he had to do double-duty for 14 years, which was his punishment.

Matthew 20:24: “And after hearing *this*, the ten were indignant against the two brothers.” The reason that they were was because some of them probably wanted to get there first, before they did, and others were upset because they didn’t want to have to submit to James and John. So, you have the full realm here. Jesus said, ‘It’s not mine to give; it’s what the Father has given, now let me tell you what you need to do.

To all 12 disciples, v 25: “But Jesus called them to *Him and* said, ‘You know that the rulers of the nations exercise lordship over them... [‘kataexousia’—*downward in a hierarchical structure*] ...and the great one... [religious leaders] ...exercise authority over them. However, it shall not be this way among you...” (vs 25-26). They were to be apostles, carrying the direct authority from Jesus Christ.

If it was not to be so among them, how much less is it to be so among those who are elders, who were not taught directly by Christ, who were not ordained directly by Christ, who are not directly commissioned by Christ to go into all the world.

“...but whoever would become great among you, let him be your **servant**” (v 26)—Greek: ‘diakonos’—which is from where we get the word *deacon*. The apostles are deacons; they’re both if you serve. If you are sent as an apostle, bearing the authority of Jesus Christ, you’re to still serve.

Verse 27: “And whoever would be first among you, let him be your **slave**”—Greek: ‘doulos’—someone who is a *purchased* slave; you’re not your own. That’s exactly what everyone is who is ordained into whatever function that God gives in the ministry or eldership. They are the *purchased slaves of Christ*. That’s how they are to conduct themselves:

Verse 28: “Just as the Son of man did not come to be served, but **to serve**... [noun form of ‘diakonos’] ...and to give His life *as* a ransom for many.” Even Christ, Who was the Son of God and the Son of man was a *deacon*—*One Who served!* This deflates all the vanity and pride that men attach to the title of an office.

Read, again, John 21 where Jesus asked Peter three times, ‘Do you love Me? Feed My sheep! Do you love Me? Feed My lambs! Do you love Me? Feed My sheep!’ And that every elder has to love God first of all ‘with all his heart, mind, soul and being.’ Next, that he serves the brethren by feeding them, and that is a demonstration of his love to God.

It is not the badge of authority that men give; it’s the blessing of God’s Holy Spirit through the grace that is given to be an elder, to serve the brethren.

Ephesians 4:11: And He gave some **as** apostles...” This means that He gave a certain number **as** apostles—not **to be** as some translations have it—indicating an office to be fulfilled if it is vacant.

In every case where we have an apostle, when Judas fell, the apostles in Acts 1 got together and they said to search out two men that had been with them from the beginning and ‘we will cast lots to see whom the Lord wants to replace him that fell.’ This is the only place that we have in the entirety of the New Testament where lots were cast. The reason being was that they were not to make the choice themselves. Christ chose them individually, and it was by lot so that Christ would inspire the choice and the lot fell to Mathias. You don’t see them doing it that way again.

Likewise, when you come to Acts 13, when Saul—later called Paul—and Barnabas were ordained to be apostles the Holy Spirit made it clear and said to separate Barnabas and Saul ‘unto the work where I have called them.’

This tells us very clearly that in this day and age, unless God makes it absolutely clear to others that He has called a person to be an apostle, and it is crystal clear as Acts 13 that we should have no apostles. Otherwise, we presume to take upon ourselves something that God never gave us the authority to do.

I think we see that in the fruit of what happened to Worldwide when Herbert Armstrong said that he was not an apostle, which was as late as 1965, they retained more of the Truth, but as soon as his wife died and he accepted the term of apostle, look what happened! So, we would have to say very clearly, unless where there is a group of ministers fasting and praying asking God for guidance and direction, and the Holy Spirit made it clear to all of them, that So and So is to be ordained an apostle, brethren, we will have no apostles. We’re not going to claim an apostleship for anybody.

This is our authority: “...and some prophets... [inspired speaking, as well as, those who

foretell future events] ...and some evangelists...” (v 11). These are all *functions*; these are *not offices*. An evangelist is as Paul told Timothy, ‘Do the work of an evangelist, and Timothy was an elder. He did the work of an evangelist, and he was an evangelist as long as he was evangelizing.

Most of those who were made evangelists were really administrators. What happened is that you ended up with so much politics going on because they were made evangelists. I don’t know what happened to them. Almost everyone who was ordained an evangelist somewhere went off the deep end. If you look around today, where are they? *Nowhere!* So, beware!

“...and some, pastors and teachers” (v 11). I think if we all who consider ourselves to be elders to be shepherds to the flock—that’s what it means here by *pastors*—it’s not an office, it’s a function of an overseer.

Jesus said, If you love Me, shepherd My sheep.’ That is *pastoring*—shepherding. It does not mean to rule over; it is not a higher office of an elder. It is a function that is to be done. But we should consider ourselves teachers so that we teach the Word of God. Then, in teaching that—if God inspires us—then we have prophesied, as a function.

Here’s the whole purpose of it; not for an self-aggrandization, or a title for any man or person, but: Verse 12: “For the perfecting of the saints...” God wants the saints perfected, meaning:

- they’re to grow up in Christ
- they’re to be taught the Word of God
- they’re to be responsible before God
- that they know how to live their lives

*To be fully spiritually mature Christians!*

“...for the work of the ministry... [service] ...for the edifying...” (v 12)—up-building. The root of this verb is like building a house—which the Church of God is likened unto a temple as well as a body—for:

“...the edifying of the body of Christ” (v 12). The easiest correction that can be done for anyone, including those who are teaching, **is if you teach yourself and correct yourself**, and in teaching the brethren you *teach them how* to correct themselves. Therefore, you don’t need to come and lambaste them and correct them. You need to inspire them to want to change, grow and overcome.

Verse 13: “Until we **all**...” All of us! As James said, ‘Don’t desire many of you to become teachers, because don’t you know that we shall receive the sterner judgment?’ But we all:

“...come into... [motion toward; something

we are growing in constantly] ...the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man... [a spiritually mature Christian] ...unto the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ" (v 13).

- That is the *goal* of teaching!
- That is the *goal* of understanding the Scriptures!

That's why it must be that everyone who teaches learns how to teach 'line upon line, precept upon precept' and put the Scriptures together. You *teach* the Word of God; you *don't use* the Word of God! There's a vast difference.

Verse 14: "So that we no longer be children, tossed and carried about with every wind of doctrine by the sleight of men in *cunning* craftiness, with a view to the systematizing of the error"—which *they have done!* Now, since it is systematized, we know the error, and can stand strong against any teaching that does not come from the Word of God inspired by Jesus Christ. That's what we need to look to.

Verse 15: "But holding the Truth in love..." Again, it comes back to John 21, 'Do you love Me? Feed My sheep.'

"...may in all things grow up *into*... [Greek: 'eis'—*movement toward*] ...Him Who is the Head, *even Christ*" (v 15). That's why there's got to be always movement toward. Christ is the Head of the Church.

Ephesians 1:20: "Which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from *the* dead, and set *Him* at His right hand in the heavenly *places*, far above every principality and authority and power..." (vs 20-21). Any spiritual religious authority on earth, be it a demon or person; government agent or king.

"...and lordship, and every name that is named—not only in this age, but also in the *age* to come; for He has subordinated all things under His feet, and has given Him *to be* head over all things to the *Church*, which is His body—the fullness of Him Who fills all things in all" (vs 21-23).

What we do as brethren and elders in yielding to Christ as the Head of the Church, we let *Him* fulfill:

- *His will* in us
- *His purpose* in us
- *His Truth* in us

That's the whole purpose!

Ephesians 4:16: "From Whom all the body, fitly framed and compacted... [made firm, established, strengthened] ...together by *that which*

every joint supplies... [the mature responsibility of all the brethren and elders combined together] ...according to *its* inner working in *the* measure of each individual part, is making the increase of the body unto *the* edifying of itself in love."

Now that we reviewed that, we're ready for Titus and see some of the other things that Paul commanded Titus. We're also going to examine, again, the function of the job, and also the authority that an elder or overseer has.

As we went through 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy, concerning doctrine, the elder has unilateral authority to rebuke anyone for preaching wrong doctrine. And with the second and third admonition, to ask them to depart; reject.

Now then, with disputes between brethren, they are first to solve the problem themselves. If that doesn't work, then they get a couple of other brethren and establish everything. If that doesn't do it then it comes before the congregation. That is a different function.

A minister does not have the responsibility to unilaterally take it upon himself to intervene in a dispute between two brethren, which they have not solved themselves. His responsibility is to say, 'You go to your brother, as Christ says, and you resolve it. You follow Matt. 18, and then if it cannot be solved, then you let me know and we will call a meeting with the congregation to let the judgment be made.'

There are two different functions there. That's why the minister is to have knowledge of the doctrine, and to know the Word of God.

- he is to guard the doctrine
- he is to guard the Truth
- as well as, preach and teach the Truth

### Book of TITUS

Titus was a Greek, who was an elder, and who was not required to be circumcised (Gal. 2).

Titus 1:1: "Paul, *a* servant of God... ['doulos'—a *bondservant or slave*] ...and *an* apostle of Jesus Christ, according to *the* faith of God's elect and *the* knowledge of *the* Truth that is according to Godliness; in *the* hope of eternal life, which God Who cannot lie promised before the ages of time, but revealed in its own set time in *the* proclamation of His Word, with which I was entrusted according to *the* commandment of God our Savior" (vs 1-3).

There, again, Paul was showing here that he was entrusted with God's Word, and to complete it; to write it (Philip. 1).

Verse 4: “To Titus, a true son according to *our* common faith: Grace, mercy *and* peace from God *the* Father and *the* Lord Jesus Christ our Savior. For this cause I left you in Crete, so that you might set in order the things that needed to be done...” (vs 4-5).

This follows right along with what we covered before, that everything be done in decency and in order (1-Cor. 14:40). There is not to be chaos within the congregations of God. But there is not to be a hierarchical authority, but there is to be order.

“...and might ordain elders **in every city**, as I commanded you” (v 5). Paul had to approve of them before he finished them. And, of course, we understand that the congregations also had to approve.

“...in every city...” obviously means that in every city where there are brethren. You cannot just ordain a man who is solely living in a city with no brethren to serve and make him an elder. How can he oversee anything when there is just himself.

Now then, he gives a summarized form of the qualifications of an elder, who is an overseer, as we read in 1-Tim. 3. Let’s just briefly review it:

Verse 6: “If any man be blameless, *the* husband of one wife, having faithful children...” Obviously, faithful children means those children still in his household. Those who grow up and lead their own lives—who then become unfaithful—he has no control over them. They are adults and he is not accountable and responsible for them.

“...not accused of debauchery or rebellion. For it is obligatory that as God’s steward an overseer be blameless...” (vs 6-7). A steward is *one who takes care of someone’s property!* He is in effect what is called a *trustee; Christ is the Trustor*. Christ gave His property, like we find in the Parable of the Talents and Pounds (Luke 19, Matt. 25) to exercise those to increase them. He’s a *steward* accountable to God!

That’s why he is “...not self-willed...” (v 7). However, do not mistake being mentally strong with doctrine that you will not change easily. I know a lot of people have accused me of being hardheaded. That is true when it comes to doctrine. But I do listen to people, and if they give me good advice, I follow it. If they give me advice that I don’t need, I don’t follow it.

I will say this: I think that all of us need to have ***the heart of David, the mind of Christ and the forehead of flint of Ezekiel!*** I think that will get us in good stead.

“...not quick-tempered, not given to wine,

not a bully, not greedy for material gain; but hospitable, a lover of good...” (vs 7-8)—good people, good things, and so forth

“...sound-minded, just... [a sense of justice] ...Holy... [motivated and guided by the Holy Spirit] ...self-controlled” (v 8) He doesn’t need someone watching over him and controlling him.

Verse 9: “Holding steadfastly to the faithful Word...” As we learned in the messages about the 12 steps of covenant, we are to hold the doctrines of Christ. We are to defend them, because the enemies of Christ become our enemies, and the doctrines that Christ rejects and abhors we are also to reject and abhor.

We do that “...according to the teachings... [Greek ‘didache’—*doctrine*] ...of Jesus Christ...” (v 9). They all come from Jesus Christ, whether Old or New Testament.

“...so that he may be able both to encourage with sound doctrine... [rightly dividing the Word of God] ...and to convict those **who are gainsayers**. For there are many rebellious and vain talkers and deceivers, especially those from *the* circumcision party, whose mouths must be stopped; who are subverting whole households, teaching things which *they* ought not, for the sake of selfish gain” (vs 9-11).

This shows how we are to defend against *false doctrines!* Many people have said, ‘Fred Coulter, why do you hate this doctrine, or what do you expose that man for his teaching? *Because we’re commanded to in the Scriptures!* Sometimes you can just expose a *false* doctrine. Other times you need to name the man, so that people will understand it.

Paul did it! Even wrote of Peter and James—didn’t he? Then we find that those he named in 1<sup>st</sup> & 2<sup>nd</sup> Timothy, for teaching other doctrine, for saying that the resurrection is already past. It would be like someone coming in here who is supposed to be *a teacher and says*, ‘Now, brethren, I’ve got *new* truth for you; we’re all going to heaven.’ ***You all stand up and gather him by the arms and escort him out the door! Their mouths must be stopped!***

Now, today we have the Jewish prayer shawls, that if you take this prayer shawl or ‘yamaka’ and put it on your head, ‘your prayers are going to be more effective.’ The truth is that *if you don’t have faith your prayer isn’t going to be affective at all!* You can put on 10,000 prayer shawls you are committing idolatry ***even if you put on one***, because you are not looking to God to answer the prayer, you are looking to a physical device to answer that prayer.

In other words, you are coming to God—by

sacred name, prayer shawl, all the other claims of the Judaizing ‘Christians’—and they’re all false teachers. That’s why we need to know the doctrines. Those things, brethren, are no different than an idol in a Catholic Church, than the beads of the rosary—for either Catholics or Hindus or Muslims. They all have beads that they pray by. Those are all physical devices, which people think will coerce God to answer a prayer. ***It won’t! It will not!***

- That’s why *they are hypocritical and vain talkers!*
- That’s why *their mouths need to be stopped!*
- if we don’t answer these doctrines
- if we don’t go through and show about the nature of God
- if we don’t go through and show the Truth of the Passover

*which day it is and the whole meaning of it*

- if we don’t go through and show about sacred names and all of these other things:
  - ✓ Sunday-keeping
  - ✓ Christmas
  - ✓ And all the rest of it

***Then we’re not doing our jobs!***

Verse 12 refers back to v 9 because these hypocritical teachers were teaching those to become gainsayers, the Cretans. They were taking these doctrines of the Judaizers and were coming back as gainsayers. This is talking about the Cretans who would do this:

Verse 12: “One from among them, *even one* of their own prophets, said, ‘Cretans *are* always liars, *and* evil, wild beasts, *and* lazy gluttons.’” Talk about the politically-correct society for today.

Sidebar: I was listening to Michael Savage—a talk show host who gives his opinion very savagely. He let a Democrat come on and talk about the election that was coming up. The Democrat was quite open saying, ‘We want to win, because we are going to enact more *hate laws* and you will be off the radio. And all of those who preach the Bible will be convicted of hate crimes.’ ***That, brethren, is the battle!***

Verse 13: “This testimony is true. For this reason you *must* rebuke them severely...” An elder has the authority to rebuke when it comes to this point. For what reason?

- To put him down? *No!*
- To show his authority? *No!*
- ***To show the authority that Jesus Christ has!***

“...**that they may be sound in the faith**” (v 13). *That’s why!* It’s not a personal motivation. It is not

because an elder is offended personally by what someone may say or do; he has to set that all aside. But “...**that they may be sound in the faith.**”

Verse 14: “Not paying attention to Jewish myths... [which is a charge to the elder *and* the congregation] ...and commandments of men, which turn away from the Truth.” That happens!

Let me just tell you something here. I got a paper that a man and woman from Australia wrote claim that you should never eat out on the Sabbath, and on the Holy Days you should never hire a meal to be brought in. You are not to buy and sell *anything* on the Sabbath Day—period!

When I went to Australia, I made the trip to answer that. I did partially answer it in some previous sermons, which they got. When I got down there in Brisbane, I expected them to be there, but they weren’t there. I had one of the members—they only lived a half-hour away; we just delayed the meeting there—to call them on the phone and see if they would come. We gave them 45 minutes to get there. They didn’t come, so we began the Bible study where I went through and showed the various things in the Old Testament and New Testament.

As it turns out, that was only an ideological mask for their *true false doctrine*, which was a 15<sup>th</sup> Passover. But they didn’t bring that out until later.

So, whenever everybody brings up something in the way of contrary doctrine, we always need to be wary—of brethren or elders—that this is only the tip of the iceberg, and they may have another agenda. What they want to do is create enough furor so that the people would agree with them and begin to assemble with them so later they could spring a 15<sup>th</sup> Passover on them, in spite of everything that was written in *The Christian Passover* book: ***Not giving attention to Jewish myths and commandments of men, which are turning men away from the Truth!***

Verse 15: “To the pure... [those who have the Spirit of God] ...all things *are* pure... [we are looking to pure motives, to pure doctrine] ...but to those who are defiled and unbelieving; nothing *is* pure; rather, both their minds and consciences *are* defiled.” How are they defiled? *Not only are they defiled, but their consciences are seared:*

- because they don’t have the Holy Spirit of God
- because they don’t love God
- because they don’t love the brethren

*But they have an agenda:*

- power
- lordship
- authority

The way they do this by false doctrines.

1-Timothy 4:1: “Now, the Spirit tells *us* explicitly that in *the* latter times some shall apostatize from the faith, *and* shall follow deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons.” That’s where a lot of the false doctrines come from.

Verse 2: “Speaking lies in hypocrisy, their consciences having been cauterized *with a hot iron.*”

(go to the next track)

That’s how a conscience is seared!

Titus 1:15: “To the pure, all things *are* pure; but to those who are defiled and unbelieving, nothing *is* pure; rather, both their minds and consciences are defiled. They personally profess to know God...” (vs 15-16).

- Oh yes, we’re God’s chosen people
- Oh yes, I’m God’s minister

“...but in *their* works they deny Him, being abominable and disobedient, and reprobate unto every good work” (v 16). We’ve seen that time and time again. We’ve seen that with the Judaizing infiltrators into the Churches of God—whether they be the large Churches of God or whether they be small fellowship groups—they come in and try and bring in Judaism.

There’s even one man who goes around trying to show the brethren how they can have a Seder meal for the Passover. His real objective is a 15<sup>th</sup> Passover. Yet, he’s considered an ordained minister in one of the Churches of God—*his name is Blaylock*

Titus 2:1: “But *as for* you... [contrary to these] ...speak the things that befit sound doctrine.” You’ll notice going through 1<sup>st</sup> & 2<sup>nd</sup> Tim. and Titus, doctrine is important. Anyone who comes to you and says that ‘doctrine divides and shouldn’t count because we don’t want to be divided, we all want to be united’ you better know that he has alterative motives, because *doctrine is designed to divide! Christ wanted it to divide!*

- to divide Truth from error
- to divide true brethren from false brethren
- to divide true minister from false ministers

So that we can serve Christ. *It’s all made to divide!*

Verse 2: “*Teach the* older men to be temperate, serious-minded, respectable, sound in the faith, in love, *and* in patience.” In other words, teaching them to grow up in Christ (Eph. 4).

Verse 3: “In like manner, *teach the* older women *to be* in *their* behavior as *it is* fitting for Godly women, not slanderers, *and* not enslaved to much wine, *but* teachers of that which is right.”

Women are to teach what?

Verse 4: “That they may teach the young women *to love their* husbands *and to love their* children.” They can tell the younger women, whenever they have difficulties at home, that since you’ve experienced some of those things, you can say: ‘Now now, dear, it’s not over just because you’ve had a fight. It’s not over just because you’re having difficulties. Here’s what you need to do.’ That’s what they are to teach.

If we had that today, think how much better this society would be. If we didn’t have all the older women out playing bingo and going on tours to Reno and Las Vegas to play the slots and cards—which a lot of them do; they waste tons of money—or sitting alone with nothing to do, if they could teach the young women how to train the children, how to cook, sew, how to do the things that build up a household. How much better would our society be with mother having been educated that way? So that when the children come home from school, there’s mom?

They’re not turned over to their own devices because mom is out working somewhere, to earn money because the society now dictates that the head of the house cannot earn enough money to make it. In many cases women have to work. If they have to work, don’t neglect your children. But if you do it to the neglect of your children, you’re in trouble and your children are in trouble. That’s just the way it goes. Sometimes those things in this society cannot be helped. What I’m saying is that within the Church it should be done this way.

Verse 5: “*To be* modest, chaste, keepers of *the* home... [that’s a big job] ...*to be* good *and* to submit themselves to their own husbands, so that the Word of God may not be blasphemed.” That’s quite a statement! If women don’t submit to their husbands, their blaspheming the Word of God. Maybe some women don’t look at it that way.

If you have difficult marriage, then you have a difficult marriage, but you have to work it out. You’re still bound. God is not going to loose you because you married someone that is difficult to live with. You have to work it out, whether male or female.

Verse 6: “In the same way, exhort the younger men *to be* sober-minded. In all things you yourself set an example of good works; in doctrine uncorrupted, serious-minded, *and* sincere; *use* sound speech that cannot be condemned, so that the one who opposes *you* may be ashamed, having nothing evil to say about you” (vs 6-8).

When we have jokingly said that we are the

*no hassle, recycled, last resort Church of God* maybe in a sense there is more truth to it than just saying it. When people today, after hearing the Truth, go out exalting themselves, God's judgment is not far behind. We can see this. We've seen it time and time again!

Verse 9: "Admonish slaves to submit themselves to their own masters, *to be* well pleasing in everything, not answering back; not misappropriating *anything*, but showing all good faithfulness..." (vs 9-10).

I heard that the Queen of England has had some labor problems in her palace because some of the perks and goodies that she gave to her servants—whom she does not pay very much—and one of them was that they could go to the royal bar and get two or three drinks during the day. Because she was taking that away, now she's having problems with them. Well, I guess if the queen giveth the queen can taketh away!

But Paul also admonished those who were masters, to treat their slaves with love and concern, because they're brethren. It's going to be hard for the servants in Buckingham Palace to stay away from the bar. They may have a little 'bootleg' service going on, who knows!

"...showing all good faithfulness so that they may do credit to the doctrine of our Savior God in everything" (v 10). That's interesting phraseology: "...do credit..." In other words, you are doing what the doctrine says, which then is a credit of your Savior God, showing that Christ is God in everything:

- in your personal behavior
- in your understanding of the doctrine

Verse 11: "For the grace of God, which brings salvation for all men, has appeared.... [not just for the elite, but for all that God calls] ...Teaching us that... [Paul was including himself as well as Titus] ...having denied ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live moderately and righteously and Godly in this present world... [here's the reason]: ...looking for the blessed hope and *the* appearing of the glory of our Savior and great God, Jesus Christ... [there it is in the space of three verses where Jesus Christ is God] ...Who gave Himself for us, so that He might redeem us from all lawlessness, and might purify for Himself **a unique people, zealous of good works**" (vs 11-14).

Here's the whole goal of everything, of any elder, teacher, of doctrines, of Christ and God; the whole thing here. "...a unique people..."—those who are to be the sons and daughters of God, to be spirit beings, born into the Kingdom of God at the

resurrection. "...zealous of good works." Yes, we are to have good works, but those good works don't bring us salvation. Only Christ can bring us salvation.

Verse 15: "Speak these things, and exhort... [to encourage, up-build] ...and rebuke... [if there's correction to be done] ...with all authority..." That's the authority that an elder has:

- for service
- for the up-building
- for the guiding
- for the directing
- for the leading

"...Do not let anyone despise you" (v 15). This is just a good summary as to how elders are to serve, because they love God, and that the brethren are the property of God

- He has called them
- He has given the Holy Spirit to them
- God the Father has begotten them

So that they can be born into the Kingdom of God. This is the whole purpose of it. Quite different than most people view through the clouded glasses of a hierarchy of those who are in charge, and those who bear rule and so forth—quite the opposite.

Titus 3:1: "Remind them to be subject to rulers, and to obey authorities, *and* to be ready for every good work." We should do that. Now is not the Kingdom of God. Jesus said, 'If My kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight.' That includes those who are trying to restore the nation to the original Constitution, which they cannot do, those sovereignists who want to take over the government by military force; we are not to do that. We're to be subject.

If we have to give a testimony because of what we believe, then we do it whenever that happens. If we are falsely arrested and accused and put in prison, then if that happens, that is so. But in any case, we're to rely and trust in God in everything.

Verse 2: Not to speak evil of anyone..." To speak evil of them, as we mentioned concerning things which are true. You are to expose false doctrine and teachings, and in some cases even name the names of those who do so, that everyone will know they are to avoid them.

But speaking evil is to say thing about someone that is not true. To report evil conduct, which is true, is not speaking evil of that person, but it is speaking the truth to expose the evil conduct.

"...not to be contentious..." (v 2). We're not

to have a chip on our shoulders and be argumentative in everything.

“...but gentle, showing all meekness toward all men. For we also were once foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving all kinds of lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy, hateful *and* hating one another” (vs 2-3). This is telling us, like where we started where Paul said, ‘Take heed to yourselves...’ We’re all to remember where we came from. We look back at some of our behavior in our lives growing up and then living before God called us, and we all fit into this category one way or another.

Verse 4: “But when the graciousness and the love of God our Savior toward man appeared.” God reached down and forgave us. I’m beginning to see that having the mind of Christ is not just the knowledge of doctrine. It is also having the love of God, the mercy of God and the forgiveness. There must be *forgiveness!* If we, in our relationship with one another:

- husband and wife
- family and children
- brethren one toward another

do not have mercy and forgiveness *we shall not receive* mercy and forgiveness. If we do not have it, then we are going right back here to being hateful and hating one another. I’m beginning to see that having the mind of Christ and forgiveness is profound, and the very cornerstone on how we deal with each other.

Remember what Peter said? *Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me? Seven times and I forgive him?* Jesus said—which is a reflection of the mind of Christ: ‘I say to you until seven times seventy, or 490 times!’ God is interested in the rehabilitation of the person, because He does not delight in the destruction even of the wicked. Some problems are deeply entrenched and take a long time to overcome! But in that we have to exercise forbearance.

Notice how we are called, v 5: “Not by works of righteousness, which we practiced...” Let’s understand something very clearly, so that we all get it straight. {Note sermon series: *Grace of God and Romans*—because the whole book of Romans goes through and shows this very clearly }

***No law, even the laws and commandments of God—which we are required to keep—bring salvation by virtue of the fact that you have kept them!***

The Protestants understand that, so they throw it all out and say that salvation is not contingent upon that. *Not true!* Please understand

that all the commandments of God are required to be kept. Salvation comes through Jesus Christ with God’s Spirit through the sacrifice of Christ. Remember that *nothing—no law, no work, no doctrine—can substitute for the sacrifice of Jesus Christ!* That’s why Paul is summarizing it here.

{note sermon series: *Justification by Faith*}

“...but according to His mercy He saved us... [by His calling, by His Spirit] ...through *the* washing of regeneration... [referring to baptism] ...and *the* renewing of *the* Holy Spirit... [renews our mind] ...which He richly poured out upon us through Jesus Christ our Savior” (vs 5-6).

The biggest mistake that every church and church organization makes is that they begin in the spirit and then they end up trying to be perfected in works or hierarchy.

All of those things then become the commandments and teachings of men, which is proclaimed by the authority of a hierarchy, have the guise of the authority of God, but are not! All you have to do is just look at all the things that the churches of this world require, and religions of this world, who do not profess Christianity, require. Look at all of the things that Catholicism and Orthodoxies and Protestantism require. Look at all the things that Islam requires and Hinduism and Buddhism. Those are all the righteousness of men that rejects Christ.

But the worst of all is the mystery of iniquity or lawlessness under the guise of Christianity, where it *appears* righteous. None of those things save you. ***Christ alone saves you!*** But all of those things are required.

- Does God use the Sabbath Day? *Yes, He does!*
- Does God use the Holy Days? *Yes, He does!*
- What is the function and purpose of those? *To fellowship with us and to teach us!*

If we do not keep those days and keep the other commandments of God, then we lose all the benefit that God will bring to us because we do through His grace.

Luke 17:3 “Watch yourselves; and if your brother commits a sin against you, rebuke him; and if he repents, forgive him.” How much more so in the marriage estate?

Verse 4: “And if he sins against you seven times in a day, and seven times in a day returns to you, saying, ‘I repent,’ **you shall** forgive him.”

That is the greater commandment; that’s the

mind of Christ. Do you expect that when you sin, and you repent to Christ, that He forgives you? *Of course!* Christ expects you to do the same!

Verse 5: “Then the apostles said to the Lord, ‘Increase our faith.’” We all want to have our faith increased—don’t we? *Yes! No doubt about it!* I need more faith, you need more faith, all the brethren need more faith. We’re to grow in grace and knowledge, and love, faith and hope.

Verse 6: “But the Lord said, ‘If you had faith as a *tiny* mustard seed, you might say to this sycamine tree, ‘Be rooted up, and be planted in the sea,’ and it would obey you.’” That’s if it’s done for a lawful and right purpose. Not out of vanity so you can say, ‘Lord, Lord, look what I did! I cast 10,000 sycamine trees into the ocean, and boy did we have the greatest Sunday-services ever.’ Jesus would say, ‘I don’t know you, you work iniquity.’

Verse 7—he gives an example: “But which of you having a servant... [‘doulous’—slave] plowing or shepherding will immediately say *to him when* he comes in from the field, ‘Come and sit down *and eat*’? Rather, will he not say to him, ‘Prepare what I may eat, and gird yourself, *and* serve me while I eat and drink; and afterwards you may eat and drink?’” (vs 7-8). This would set every unionist on edge. No rights!

Verse 9: “Is he thankful to that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I think not.... [it’s required] ...Likewise you also, when you have done all *the* things that are commanded you, say, ‘We are unprofitable servants, because we have done that which **we were obligated to do**’” (vs 9-10). If we do with the right attitude of love and service and open-mindedness to Christ, what is He going to do?

- fellowship with us
- bless us with knowledge
- give us understanding
- encourage us
- inspire us
- lead us

### ***It’s all what Christ does!***

Titus 3:5: “Not by works of righteousness, which we practiced... [our duty to do] ...but according to His mercy He saved us, through *the* washing of regeneration and *the* renewing of *the* Holy Spirit, which He richly poured out upon us through Jesus Christ our Savior; so that, **having been justified by His grace, we would become heirs according to the hope of eternal life.** This is a faithful saying, and I desire you to strongly affirm ***all*** these things... [everything that he’s taught here]

...so that those who have believed God may apply themselves to doing good works...” (vs 5-8)—motivated by the Spirit of God. You do things because you love God and love the person you’re doing it for, even though it’s an obligation to do, you don’t do it as an obligation. You do it because you love the person.

“...These things are good and profitable for men” (v 8). That’s how we’re to live our lives. I think here that’s exactly how we operate. All the brethren everywhere need to grow into that.

Then Paul gives a warning, v 9: “But avoid foolish questions...” That’s why if you sent me a paper based upon a foolish question, and you do not get an answer from me, or I do not answer according to a sermon that I may give, do not feel bad. Go learn something of more substance.

For example, I had a man write me and say that ‘you should not travel 250 miles on the Sabbath. You should travel no more than a half mile. That’s what Sabbath Day’s journey is.’

In talking to him on the phone when he called to castigate me for saying that if you travel, it’s permissible to eat out on the Sabbath, even if that has to become a thing of ‘binding and loosing’ If, in conscience, he doesn’t want to, then he doesn’t have to. But when I told him that I drive up north I have to go over a toll bridge and have to pay \$2 to get across, and he said to go some other way. I said that would entail another 75 miles in driving to go around it! Well, for the sake of not paying the toll, so that I could please his picky doctrine, I should drive another 150 miles round trip and make it 400 instead of 250? That’s not proper judgment.

So, if I don’t answer a question like that, just consider it a foolish question. Go learn something more important.

“...and genealogies...” (v 9). I don’t care who you are. So what if you can trace your lineage back to the Queen of England? Don’t brag on it; go read about their sins and hope that you don’t do the same thing.

“...and debates... [you don’t need debates; let the Scriptures settle it] ...and quarrels about law...” (v 9)—which we’ve had. Don’t eat out on the Sabbath. I don’t eat out every Sabbath, but when there is a need, that’s fine.

One man said, ‘Let the brethren provide for you.’ I don’t want to presume upon the brethren to feel obligated every Sabbath that they have to do this for me. I’m making them work on my behalf. And there are many other things.

“...for they are unprofitable and vain” (v 9).

We don't want Sabbath services to be filled that way, and put everybody on edge making it just a carnal thing. We've all gone through Sabbath services that way! I tell you what, brethren, we aren't going to return to it. If you want to return to it, go form your own group. God lay down your own laws and see if God blesses you.

Verse 10: "After the first and second admonition, reject a man who is teaching heresy..." You don't have to put up with it, and the elder or minister can do that unilaterally; he doesn't have to ask the congregation if it's permissible. They're probably waiting for him to do it so they don't have to suffer at the hands of this person coming up after Sabbath services and saying, 'Hey, did you know...' Spare us all!

"...knowing that such a person has been subverted and is sinning, being condemned by his own words" (v 11). That's how you bring peace in the congregations of God.

We have an open-door policy. Those who want to fellowship with us can fellowship with us, but you have to beware, because the brethren know their Bibles pretty much. So, if you come bringing another doctrine, or if you come with a secret agenda, know that that will be known, and when it is understood that the door works the other way.

Also, another thing that is true: There are brethren who have come associated with us who thought that they knew a better way. They would go out and, lo and behold, found that they didn't know a better way. They have repented and come back. Well, they can come back. If you repent and learn the lesson, come back. But everything will be done in decency and in order, according to the Word of God, and the Spirit of God, in love and truth to serve all the brethren, so that we may continue to have the fellowship of Jesus Christ and God the Father with us every Sabbath and Holy Day.

When we get down to our own carnal devices, God the Father and Jesus Christ remove themselves in degree until sooner or later, if we don't change, they no longer fellowship with us and we are just left with our own carnal Sabbath-keeping and Holy Day-keeping, deceiving ourselves into thinking we're doing the will of God. That's where we are with this, and this is what Paul is saying here. Then he gives some admonitions:

Verse 12: "When I send Artemas to you, or Tychicus, make haste to come to me at Nicopolis; for I have decided to spend the winter there. Be diligent to equip Zenas the lawyer and Apollos for their journey, so that they may lack nothing. And let our brethren also learn to devote themselves to good works for services that are needed, so that they may

not be unfruitful. All of those with me salute you. Salute those who love us in the faith. Grace be with all of you. Amen" (vs 12-15).

We won't go through the Epistle of Philemon except to say read it yourself and you will see how Paul handled a very difficult situation of a runaway slave, who came and served Paul and who repented and needed to go back and serve his original master. Paul said that 'if there's anything that he owes you, you lay it to my charge. But if you can, give this man his freedom.' I think that's a good lesson for all of us on how to handle situations between one another.

This gives us a complete set and I hope this helps everyone. It gives us the foundation and understanding, and now we have it completely put together in one package.

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

#### Scriptural References:

- 1) Acts 20:28-31
- 2) Matthew 20:24-28
- 3) Ephesians 4:11-15
- 4) Ephesians 1:20-23
- 5) Ephesians 4:16
- 6) Titus 1:1-15
- 7) 1 Timothy 4:1-2
- 8) Titus 1:15-16
- 9) Titus 2:1-15
- 10) Titus 3:1-6
- 11) Luke 17:3-10
- 12) Titus 3:5-15

#### Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- John 21
- Acts 13
- Matthew 18
- Galatians 2
- Philippians 1
- 1 Corinthians 4:40
- 1 Timothy 3
- Luke 19
- Matthew 25

#### Also referenced:

- Book: *The Christian Passover* by Fred R. Coulter
- Sermon Series:
  - ✓ *Grace of God*
  - ✓ *Romans*
  - ✓ *Justification by Faith*

FRC:bo  
Transcribed: 2-23-15



***Christian Biblical Church of God Offices:***

***United States***

Post Office Box 1442  
Hollister, California 95024-1442

***Canada***

Post Office Box 125  
Brockville, Ontario  
K6V 5V2 Canada

***Australia***

GPO 1574  
Sydney 2001  
Australia

***United Kingdom***

Post Office Box 6144  
Kings Langley WD4 4DY  
United Kingdom

***New Zealand***

Post Office Box 8217  
Cherrywood  
Tauranga 3145  
New Zealand

***Republic of South Africa***

Post Office Box 494  
Frankfort 9830  
Rep. of South Africa

***La Verdad de Dios***

[www.laverdadedios.org](http://www.laverdadedios.org)  
Post Office Box 831241  
San Antonio, Texas 78283

[www.truthofgod.org](http://www.truthofgod.org)  
[www.churchathome.org](http://www.churchathome.org)  
[www.afaithfulversion.org](http://www.afaithfulversion.org)